



现代  
修真

# 天剑仙

[胡盼紫辰]  
作品

2013年联袂仙侠频道最新力作

修仙者携宝重生都市，化龙腾飞！

# Genius Sword Immortal

Chapters 101 - 150

---

**by: Feng Yin Zi Chen**

**Translation: [Novel Saga](#)**

**Publisher: [Yuki](#)**

---

# Table of Contents

[Chapter 101 - A Classy, Goddess-Like Lady](#)

[Chapter 102 - Cai Shaohong!](#)

[Chapter 103 - Lin Shiqing's beloved](#)

[Chapter 104 - The Tracking Plan](#)

[Chapter 105 - Yanxi Villa District](#)

[Chapter 106 - A Wretched Man](#)

[Chapter 107 - Luring The Snake Out Of Its Hole](#)

[Chapter 108 - Another Masked Man](#)

[Chapter 109 - My Enemy's Enemy Is My Friend](#)

[Chapter 110 - The Rising Dead](#)

[Chapter 111 - Black Jar Of Souls](#)

[Chapter 112 - Turned Into A Retard](#)

[Chapter 113 - Frames Him](#)

[Chapter 114 - Cai Shaohong's Trump Card](#)

[Chapter 115 - A Rare Heavenly Stone Bead](#)

[Chapter 116 - Ten Years Cultivation](#)

[Chapter 117 - A Quiet Departure](#)

[Chapter 118 - Masked Man's Shadow](#)

[Chapter 119 - Su Menghan Is Captured](#)

[Chapter 120 - Soul Sealing Technique](#)

[Chapter 121 - Lin Clan!](#)

[Chapter 122 - I Am The Masked Man](#)

[Chapter 123 - Xiao Qi's Abduction](#)

[Chapter 124 - Lin Rentian's Job](#)

[Chapter 125 - Wilderness Attack](#)

[Chapter 126 - The Golden Sword!](#)

[Chapter 127 - Zhui Hun, The Armed Escort](#)

[Chapter 128 - Factory Explosion](#)

[Chapter 129 - Capture The Masked Man Alive!](#)

[Chapter 130 - Mask Uncovered!](#)

[Chapter 131 - Xiao Qi Shows Up](#)

[Chapter 132 - Irrefutable Evidence](#)

[Chapter 133 - The East China Sea Will Be In A Huge Wave](#)

[Chapter 134 - He Was Just The First](#)

[Chapter 135 - The Sword Tip Falls From The Heaven!](#)

[Chapter 136 - Asura Tactics!](#)

[Chapter 137 - Astonishing Tactics](#)

[Chapter 138 - Tang Clan's Tang Qingling](#)

[Chapter 139 - The Midnight Thief](#)

[Chapter 140 - The Hapless Thief](#)

[Chapter 141 - Agility Skill Comprehension](#)

[Chapter 142 - East China Sea's Coral King](#)

[Chapter 143 - A Slap On The Face](#)

[Chapter 144 - A Ruthlessly Beaten Face](#)

[Chapter 145 - Can You Take The Responsibility?](#)

[Chapter 146 - The Old Man's Aggression](#)

[Chapter 147 - College Entrance Exam Ends](#)

[Chapter 148 - Adverse Situation](#)

[Chapter 149 - An Assured Victory](#)

[Chapter 150 - Astonishing Reversal!](#)

## Chapter 101 - A Classy, Goddess-Like Lady

---

When these three people walked towards the school entrance, they really saw a slim and graceful figure standing there, attracting the gazes of numerous passing by students and parents.

Due to a sudden surge of the people, it had become very difficult for these three, to clearly see her, they could only see that she was clogged up by several people, and all were constantly trying to dedicate their affability to please her. Also, the parents easily recognized her identity as the daughter of Lin Clan, and even they also started trying to get close to her.

“Ye Feng!”

All of a sudden, a crisp and pleasant voice passed through the school gate. Soon after this voice, the crowd between these three people and the school gate, naturally started to get out of their way.

Ye Feng raised his head, and poured his gaze at her, all of a sudden he was stupefied by her beauty.

He saw a tall, beautiful, positive temperament girl, with a beaming face, was walking leisurely towards him. Her beautiful facial features were highly compassionate, so mesmerising as if making people feel the spring breeze.

Well, she was one hell of a classy, princess-like lady!

Just after pouring a single glance at her exquisite, impeccable and milky white face, nobody could ever forget it. Especially a pair of her beautiful eyes, which were so limpid and rich with charm, and when she looked with those eyes, it seemed as if she was staring at the profound elusive starry sky.

Her clear pitch-black long hair like a waterfall, gracefully billowing around her shoulders, and highlighting her snow white tender neck and

collarbone, making any man completely unable to bear but look at her several times.

Especially Further down, her snow white V-neck shirt chest folded wonderfully, as well as her deep ravines were looming between the two buttons, which could make any man have a parched mouth, that was a pair of stunning fullness, which was closely wrapped by the snow white shirt, plentiful and upright, quite vivid!

Underneath the thin shirt, there was a slender narrow waist, immediately followed by a black tight-fitting hip wrapping short skirt, which was sketching out her perfect body curves. Her slender legs, under a pair of her skin-coloured leg socks, were appearing quite beautiful. Her exquisite feet stepping on a pair of fine high-heeled sandals, revealing her delicate slim ankle to the extent where even the most demanding foot fetish couldn't see a shred of flaws in them.

And such a beautiful, classy and goddess-like lady was she, still, a sweet smile was lurking around her face all the time, which could easily become the reason of man's destruction, countless times!

“Hey, she just looked at me and smiled, ah ha ha!”

“Dream on, obviously, she smiled to me!”

Two boys already had been very noisy and quarrelling with each other at one side, however, they still didn't attract much attention, because currently, the attention of each and every person was entirely on this point, that did such a pretty lady really come over here especially to look for that teenager, called Ye Feng?

Although Ye Feng had earned a little fame among the students' circle of Yanshan Junior High School, but still many parents didn't know him, they were just dying to know that how could such a beauty have something to do with an ordinary high school student, were they related?

“Hey, are you staring at her?”

Seeing Ye Feng dazing out and carrying a blank facial expression, Su Meghan couldn't help but pinched his arm.



“Well, no, actually she is a little bit different from what I had imagined .....

Ye Feng helplessly smiled, earlier he had thought that Lin Shiqing's beauty should be on the same level as his female master, Su Feiying, like she would also look noble and elegantly glamorous type of beauty. However, it seemed like that wasn't the case now.

“Hmmm, have a talk with her, I am leaving first now.”

Su Menghan lightly snorted as she pinched his arm softly once again. Actually, she was really a very sensible girl, hence she left first! Originally, Ye Feng had also thought that this girl was likely to become restless and might cause a little confusion. But seeing her leaving them alone, he really felt a little relaxed.

“Small Bee, put your best into it.”

Ou B sighed and said that, while patting his shoulder.

All along, Ou B had been hiding something from Ye Feng very deeply in his heart, that he was a little discontented with him. Particularly because of this fact that although his engagement had already been fixed with Miss Lin, still, he was hooked up with Xiaohua, it was such a waste of resources, quite greedy!

Seeing this reaction of Ou B, Ye Feng could only smile, since all of these things concerned with him, were totally incomprehensible to him yet.

When Ou B also left him and entered the school, the centre of attraction of that princess-like lady fell directly on Ye Feng, and with a smile, she extended her pure white delicate hand : “I'm Lin Shiqing.”

“Ye Feng.”

He also stretched out his hand to hold her hand which was quite smooth, exquisite and soft, as if it was without bones!

Students and parents were very enviously looking at Ye Feng from one side, he could hold the hand of such a beautiful attractive lady, he must be feeling extremely happy at the moment! They all were greedily staring

at him and were feeling restless to rush and replace Ye Feng, so that they could hold her hand tightly and never loosen it ever.

Unfortunately, Ye Feng was different to what they had thought, he gently held her hand and then took his hand back, leaving several people stunned.

This boy was not too young, as he wasn't even the least bit interested in taking such a cheap advantage of her! Several people were thinking that Ye Feng must have come today completely well dressed, just to make a good impression, however, there were also several students who already knew the news of his engagement with Miss Lin. Hence, they were somewhat sneering while thinking that already their engagement was settled, so was it still necessary to carry out this kind of artificial things?

As everyone knew that Ye Feng would never think of doing anything so cheap, rather he would try to make a good impression by not doing cheap things. Nowadays, he already had Long Wan'er at one hand, and Su Menghan on the other side, and both of them were also quite classy, who would never lose to this top beautiful woman, Lin Shiqing.

He rather had mixed feelings, that Lin Shiqing was indeed attractive, her stature was quite good, and her disposition was also seemingly gentle, no wonder could be called as Yanshan's first beautiful woman.

She was a 21-years old, second-year university student. She was extremely beautiful, classy and goddess-like lady, with a little shy facial feature, overall which was quite enough to make countless men spurt out blood.

"Let's go, this is the first time we have met, let your sister take you out."

Perhaps, she felt that the crowd around was somewhat repugnant, therefore, with a smile accompanied by a blink of an eye, she pulled Ye Feng's wrist and walked outside.

Ye Feng listened to her and suddenly remained stunned, "sister"?

However, soon he somewhat understood the plan of Lin Shiqing. It seemed that this beauty came to see him today, by completely holding a

clear goal, and that was she would make a clear distinction between the relations. Therefore, she took the initiative to get control over the situation, by putting forth the older sister and younger brother relationship between them, simultaneously she also clarified that she didn't want to have an engagement with Ye Feng!

“It seems that this beauty is indeed worthy of being Miss Lin. In the future, she could easily deal with numerous business, social and political confrontation, with this little strategy.”

Ye Feng thought to himself, as he followed her all the way out of the crowd.

If Lin Shiqing would refuse this marriage on such a pretext of this siblings thing, then by doing this, she would not only achieve her goal quite easily, but by using this way, she would also not hurt the sentiments of Lin Clan as well as Ye Clan. For her, indeed it was the best choice to fulfil her purpose, without ruining the relationship between both the sides.

She was revolting, but just using a gentle way of resistance.

Was she tougher than Old man Lin?

Dreaming .....

“Get inside the car.”

Along with Ye Feng, Lin Shiqing came to the roadside, next to a conspicuous red Lamborghini. She opened the handsome scissor-styled doors, and then explained with a smile: “Originally I wanted to go to your house to pick you up, but then thought that it would be a better choice to come to your school, to help you ask for a leave.”

Her idea was very thoughtful, but unfortunately somewhat had underestimated her own influence, as a result, she was awfully blocked at the school gate, and caused such a terrific scene just a moment ago .....

“You will help me to take a leave? Don't tell me you want to take me out to stroll all day long?”

Ye Feng smiled and asked, as he stepped inside and sat in a red sports car, the smell of a faint scent of a woman was floating inside, which was very relaxing.

“Why, don’t you have the time?”

Lin Shiqing’s eyelashes curved, as she looked at him with a smiling face.

“Yes, I have.”

Ye Feng nodded, leaning comfortably on the seat.

However, at this moment, his mind was thinking about the mysterious organisation of Yanjing. He didn’t know whether Lin Clan had any relevant information about this organisation or not ? He just wanted to give a try, so as to draw out anything from Lin Shiqing’s mouth.

The red Lamborghini quickly left Yanshan Junior High School, leaving behind a group of envy, jealousy looking visions at the school’s gate .....

## Chapter 102 - Cai Shaohong!

---

Regarding Lamborghini, Ye Feng didn't have much idea, however, he only knew one thing, that probably it cost several million. Anyway, if it was compared with Scar's Hummer H2 and BMW, then undoubtedly it was much more expensive than both of them.

Sitting in a grand car, and on top of that, sitting beside a classy, heavenly looking lady, could make any person extremely comfortable without a doubt. It didn't matter whether Ye Feng was or not, however, Lin Shiqing's mood was finally pretty good.

"Little Ye, that girl from before, is she your girlfriend? You really have pretty good taste."

They were in the car, and it seemed like she randomly asked that question from him with a smile. Her supple long hair was swaying by the wind, and gently provoking his heartstrings, her exquisite perfect oval-shaped face altogether had become an extremely pretty landscape.

"Hmmm, so you don't have to worry about anything."

Ye Feng chuckled softly and said : "I haven't heard of you before, it's only my grandfather ..... you know."

"Oh, is it?"

She smiled gently, the corners of her mouth slightly turned upwards, making a shape of an arc, as she showed her response towards Ye Feng's performance, which was a bit unexpected and surprising.

In fact, when she was all prepared to meet Ye Feng, at that time she had thought that he was just an ordinary high-school student. And when any ordinary high-school student would hear about his engagement with a campus queen of Yanshan University, then definitely he couldn't control his happiness and become wild with joy, wouldn't he be delighted beyond measure?

She had already prepared a lengthy speech for this situation, as she wanted to take the time of a whole day, so as to establish an elder sister's image in the mind of Ye Feng, making him dispel the thought of marrying her.

But now, it seemed that there was no need to carry out this act.

Ye Feng's disposition was very matured, even at the time of seeing her for the first time, he took her very lightly, with complete indifference, as if he saw an old common friend. This kind of psychological quality of Ye Feng forced Lin Shiqing to secretly appreciate him in her heart.

Not to mention the high school student, she had seen several young people from the high society, really it was very difficult in front of her to maintain a calm and composed stature!

However, she didn't have the least bit idea that currently Ye Feng's mind was completely occupied by the thought that how to dig some news related to Cai Shao out from her mouth, without causing her suspicions .....

"Keke, I personally feel that now in this new era and the new atmosphere, we should worship free love. This sort of arranged marriages, we, as the youth of the new century, must resolutely resist this."

Ye Feng said that shamelessly, as he thought that in order to extract something out of her mouth, he must establish a good relationship with her. And the method to be used to create a good relation was of course to 100 % agree with the meaning of the opposite party.

"Pretty good, you really have the rebellious spirit."

Indeed as expected, Ye Feng had suddenly created a very favourable impression in her eyes by using this act, and as a result, her smiling face turned more delightful: "Little Ye, have you done your breakfast?"

"Not yet."

Ye Feng replied truthfully, normally, he used to have his breakfast after going inside the school, since he used to buy something to eat from the

school's canteen. However today, he didn't enter the school, naturally, he didn't get the time to have his breakfast.

“Then eat something with your elder sister.”

She said that with a very clear and gentle voice : “Near Yanshan University, there is a café, which is quite good, and has been opened by my friend.”

“As you wish.”

Ye Feng nodded his head, simultaneously his heart felt very helpless. She kept on saying ‘elder sister’ over and over, might be because that was giving a little sense of security to her.

The distance between Yanshan Junior High School and Yanshan University was not far. Soon, the red Lamborghini stopped on the street near Yanshan University. The café she had mentioned earlier was not far away from there.

It was the time to get off, she stepped out of the car and then closed its door, simultaneously she lightly teased her hair with her fingers, very gracefully and naturally, which suddenly crazily jolted the heart of Ye Feng, making him couldn't help but look at her several times, and then he quickly turned his head to another side.

Although this beautiful lady was stirring up his manly emotions, but now he couldn't glance at her anymore, or else he would definitely be in trouble. Finally, he got success in creating such a pure juvenile like an image in her heart, which might be completely destroyed by him all of a sudden, if he kept on peeping at her like this.

“Let's go.”

Suddenly a pure and sweet fragrance greeted his nostrils, immediately followed by a white hand latched on his shoulder. It was actually Lin Shiqing who circled her hand around his shoulder with a smile, since she wanted to lead him to the roadside café which was not far away.

Considering their height, she was only a little bit shorter than Ye Feng, that was why she rested her hand on his shoulder comfortably, without

external help, which was actually appearing very harmonious. From their appearance, they exactly looked like a pair of sister and brother, they totally didn't have the appearance of lovers.

On one side, a casually dressed Ye Feng, whose face was reeking of immaturity from head to toe, while on the other side, Lin shiqing, who had a matured temperament, and each and every action of her was matchless and highly attractive, even if she was being a little bit shy, still the gap between the two sides was enormously big!

From the roadside, many Yanshan University students and pedestrians were constantly throwing gazes at them, even more than that, few of them took out their cell phones and started taking their photographs from quite a distance.

As the number one beautiful and prettiest woman of Yanshan University, she was indeed fascinating, her popularity had even surpassed a lot of currently popular celebrities, to the extent that her gossiping post related to her current situation was sent to the campus forum, and instantly it spread everywhere like fire in the jungle.

Especially, because she had her hand rested on a shoulder of a guy, who looked like a high school student. Hence it had become a hot topic that was that the legendary fiancé of Miss Lin?

The news exploded out!

However, she wasn't afraid of being misunderstood, because she had already completed the overall plan.

While from Ye Feng's perspective, since he was extremely close to her, especially a pair of her full, sticking out chest suddenly came so close to him, and then like adding fuel to the fire, the faint smell of woman's perfume floating around her body, made him unable to bear any more, and suddenly his heart started beating fast.

"Damn it, it seemed like I am getting worse more and more? I remember, back then when I used to face my master every day, it seems that this kind of feeling, did I use to have every day?"



Ye Feng criticised himself in his heart, as he tried to strongly self-stabilize himself.

“Come on.”

Lin Shiqing smiled sweetly as she led him to go forward, and soon they arrived at the entrance of a family’s managed “Qi Qi Tea restaurant”.

At this time, several young college students were coming out of the cafe, and suddenly they saw right against their eyes, Lin Shiqing wrapping her hand around Ye Feng’s shoulder.

“Is this a coincidence eh, has sister Lin along with her friend, come over here to eat breakfast?”

The youth leading the group, was a handsome young man. Seeing their intimate appearance, apparently, he was somewhat flabbergasted. By taking a close look of this handsome guy, it seemed like he looked almost like a celebrity, moreover, by listening to his voice which had a trace of femininity, it could be clearly said that he must be very popular in his school.

“Well, this is one of my relatives, Ye Feng. Soon, he is going to study in Yanshan University, therefore I’m leading him to make him familiar with the environment.”

Very politely, by putting a smile on her face, Lin Shiqing replied, her performance was really like a decent lady. Then she immediately asked: “Little Zhao, isn’t Shaohong with you?”

“No, brother Cai went to practice a ball game very early in the morning.”

That youth who was called “Little Zhao,” he glanced at Ye Feng somewhat puzzled, then with his friends, he left the entrance. It was clear that he obviously had respect for Lin Shiqing.

“Then we are going in, see you later.”

She waved his hand at those guys, and with a smile, she led Ye Feng into the cafe.

“Zhao brother, there is a problem, this Ye Feng, isn't he Miss Lin's fiancé like we heard earlier?”

A young boy, while somewhat strangely looking at the back of those two people, said in a whispering tone.

“Sister Lin always has the discretion, then what should we worry about? I'll report this to elder brother Cai, that's the end, don't care too much.”

The youth Zhao, who was the leader of the group, beckoned with his hand, then he pulled out his cell phone and sent a short note, after that he turned his head and with a smiling face, said to his friends : “This wimpy kid Ye Feng, how can he be a good match for Sister Lin? Sister Lin's heart has already been taken away by elder brother Cai, so why are you guys flustered?”

As soon as they listened to him, they smiled and felt relieved. That was right, how could such a small wimpy kid compete with such a popular school idol?

.....

Ye Feng followed her and entered the café, however, his complexion had already changed.

Elder brother Cai Shaohong, Cai Shaohong!

Cai Shao?

The name ‘Cai Shaohong’ which was mentioned over and over by Lin Shiqing and that Little Zhao, was he the same ‘Cai Shao’, the boss of that Mysterious Organization?

## Chapter 103 - Lin Shiqing's beloved

---

The decoration of the cafe was very elegant, the environment was peaceful and beautiful, and its white background was making the whole café look very fresh and delightful.

On a seat close to the window, Ye Feng and Lin Shiqing sat down facing each other, incautiously Ye Feng's eyes got attracted towards her V-neck shirt, leading to her snow white attractive ravine, but quickly somewhat awkwardly, he turned away his face.

Lin Shiqing didn't care about it, instead with a faint smile, while sitting gracefully on the chair, she picked up the menu card from the table, and with a clear voice, asked: "What would you like to eat?"

"As per you wish."

Ye Feng wasn't familiar with this sort of café thing, moreover, he was also not picky about the food. Presently, his full concentration was just revolving around Cai Shaohong. This guy, did he actually have any kind of relationship with Cai Shao, of the mysterious organisation?

"What are you thinking?"

She saw him a bit lost and turned a bit curious, therefore she asked that, her rosy lips slightly turned upwards, forming a beautiful moving radian.

"I'm thinking about Cai Shaohong, who is this guy?"

He smiled and bluntly asked that.

When Lin Shiqing heard that, she showed a somewhat unexpected smile, but suddenly from behind, a voice like a skylark, very melodious, brisk, and pleasant to hear type, arrived : "Oh, so you don't even know Cai Shaohong, how can you become eligible as Lin Shiqing's fiancé?"

Ye Feng immediately turned back and saw a cute schoolgirl coming out

from inside the restaurant. With a big stride, she quickly arrived at their table, and by putting on a sweet smile full of curiosity, she came closer to him and looked at him somewhat weirdly.

“Well, Xiao Qi, don’t scare him.”

Upon seeing this, Lin Shiqing smiled and said : “Well, Little Ye, she is the owner of this cafe, Xiao Qi, and Xiao Qi, he is Ye Feng, he is about to appear in the college entrance examination, therefore, I brought him here to Yanshan University, to roam around and familiarize him with the environment.”

The way she said ‘Little Ye’, it didn’t take long for this girl named Xiao Qi to see through the thoughts of Lin Shiqing. Obviously, Lin Shiqing didn’t want to talk about any stuff related to her engagement with Ye Feng, or else she wouldn’t have said “Little Ye”.

Xiao Qi was a member of a small clan of Yanjing, naturally her clan couldn’t be compared with Lin Clan, the number one Clan of Yanjing. However, it didn’t prevent Lin Shiqing and Xiao Qi from becoming best friends and sharing everything to each other. Therefore, they used to understand each other’s thoughts right away.

For this Qi Qi Cafe, in order to pass her leisure time, Xiao Qi asked her Clan to invest money while opening it. Although, Xiao Clan was a small clan just like Xie Clan, but for them, money didn’t matter at all, they really didn’t pay too much attention towards it.

“Ah regarding this.”

Clad in a white lace short-sleeved shirt, and a pair of slim jeans, Xiao Qi generously sat down beside Ye Feng, her sweet ponytail was dangling around her neck. Then smilingly, she said: “Little Ye, Cai Shaohong is our Shiqing’s beloved. ”

“Do you want to die?”

Lin Shiqing ridiculously said that: “it’s too early yet.”

“How is that? Still not allowing us to speak about it?”

Xiao Qi said that while sticking out her small breasts, but how unfortunate it was, her size if compared with Lin Shiqing's, was not at all worth mentioning .....

“Hello sister Xiao Qi, you continue, I'm very much interested in hearing it.”

Ye Feng smiled.

Xiao Qi looked towards him and thought that he indeed was a child, so wasn't he jealous?

As it was already known that Ye Feng never got jealous of anything, he was just feeling a little funny.

If Cai Shaohong was really the same Cai Shao of the mysterious organisation, then right under the eyelids of Lin Clan, he had made one year of his petty action, moreover, Lin Clan couldn't even discover that actually Miss Lin was interested in this guy. It could be said that either Lin Clan was very stupid, or Cai Shaohong was very smart, since very intelligently he maintained utmost secrecy to operate his dirty job.

As for the partnership between the mysterious organisation and Lin Clan was concerned, it couldn't have any possibility, because, the opposite party didn't need to draw support from the crime world of Yanjing.

Also, he didn't even know that if Cai Shaohong was really a great guy, then up to what extent, since he made Lin Shiqing, who was considered as a heavenly beauty and the most prettiest woman of Yanjing, crazy for him.

When Xiao Qi noticed that Lin Shiqing didn't show any objection, she quickly understood that probably she had kept this point to hit Ye Feng. Therefore, she smiled and said: “Cai Shao is our Yanshan university's best basketball player and is an extremely handsome guy, although his father is Chinese, but he has the nationality of the USA, and currently he is the chairman of the board of directors of Pei Keang Group. Cai Shao also has the nationality of the USA, he is now studying abroad at Yanshan University. And just like Shiqing, he is also a second-year

university student, but has already become our school idol. ~ ”

Ye Feng was listening to her, and was very much enjoying it. So, originally this guy had a foreign nationality.

As for Pei Keang Group, he had also heard about it, it was a very famous high-tech corporation in the USA. At present, the mainstream of the world's military electronics and communication products, were developed by this group only, of course, the most sophisticated product's circulation was firmly grasped in the hands of the mighty USA.....

“It's just his nationality.”

While looking at Ye Feng's face, Xiao Qi winked and said : “Actually, his parents are Chinese.”

“This problem is not a small thing.”

Lin Shiqing lightly said: “If he doesn't change his nationality, then it will be impossible for me to accept him.”

Her bright eyes revealed a hint of regret, as if they were expressing that each and every aspect of Cai Shaohong had made her already very satisfied, except this remaining nationality issue.

It could be said that Lin Shiqing represented the China's uppermost layer of the political image, and if she fell in love with a guy of the U.S. nationality, it would certainly cause a very bad effect. Hence, she definitely had to consider this point.

Soon, Lin Shiqing's ordered stuff, like two sandwiches, tarts and milk, were delivered to their table.

While having his breakfast, Ye Feng constantly made a veiled attack to draw out something more about that Cai Shaohong's usual habits, hobbies and so on. However, unfortunately, in the end, he didn't get success in arriving at a conclusion that whether this Cai Shaohong and Cai Shao of the mysterious organisation had any connection with each other or not.

Since he knew almost nothing about Cai Shao of the mysterious

organisation, hence it had become very difficult for him to come to a valid conclusion. But whatever might be the outcome, he decided to start his research right from this guy, Cai Shaohong.

Seeing Ye Feng unceasingly inquiring about Cai Shaohong and the stuff related to him, both of these women looked at each other helplessly, with a bit puzzled expression. Obviously, they thought that in this game of drawing maximum information out to understand the opposite party a bit more clearly, Ye Feng was seriously trying hard, so as to defeat his opponent, Cai Shaohong.

What a pity, in the eyes of Xiao Qi, Ye Feng's present condition simply couldn't be compared with Cai Shaohong. And on the other hand, Lin Shiqing thought that she badly failed to profoundly engrave her image as an elder sister in Ye Feng's mind, hence she must continue to try hard, and soon she would make him understand that love relationship was impossible between them.

Ye Feng probably knew that these two women were thinking something, however, they weren't explaining it. However, he was 100 % sure that these women could never suspect that he was inquiring about Cai Shaohong because of some other purpose!

It could be concluded on the basis of discussion that Cai Shaohong was Yanshan University's basketball prodigy, a music genius, a great business-minded person, the vice president of the student council, had a cafe, and always used to do charity .....

One after another, things related to Cai Shaohong were clearly indicating that he was indeed an extraordinary person.

“How about take me along with you to see him?”

After finished eating his stuff, and by keeping his composure calm, Ye feng asked.

As the word went out, it made Lin Shiqing and Xiao Qi a bit startled all of a sudden, why did Ye Feng want to meet Cai Shaohong?

Could it be that he wanted to initiate the challenge directly?

It wasn't something Lin Shiqing had thought. After all, she didn't want to see Ye Clan, Lin Clan and Cai Shaohong got into any kind of confrontation, she just wanted to solve this problem peacefully.

Ye Feng saw her pondering something, smiled and added: "To see the future brother-in-law, should not have any problem, right?"

He said this in such a way, so that it became impossible and totally inappropriate for Lin Shiqing to refuse him again, hence elegantly, with a smile, she said : "Of course, it doesn't have any problem, however, this term has been used too early, at present there is a very little relationship between me and him. "

Noticing the calm and collected temperament of Ye Feng, Lin Shiqing still appreciated him a bit in her heart, but this didn't mean she would accept the engagement arrangement. If she would lead Ye Feng to see Cai Shaohong, simultaneously she would let him know the disparity between them, making him quit in advance before difficulties.

However, Ye Feng stood up, a vague smile gradually appeared on his face.

For him, Lin Shiqing and this marriage thing, both were completely irrelevant. At present, his prime focus was to personally see Cai Shaohong, then perhaps he could find any clue, and even could look for opportunities to hypnotise him. If the opposite person turned out to be the mysterious organisation's Cai Shao, then he would never hesitate, and would kill him with his own hands!



## Chapter 104 - The Tracking Plan

---

Since currently in the café, there were several important things to be taken care of, therefore, Xiao Qi didn't go along with those two people.

"He should still be playing ball right now, come along with your elder sister to the field."

Lin Shiqing along with Ye Feng came out of the café and said that smilingly. Since, it was her vivid plan all along, to establish a gentle and caring big sister's image in the mind of Ye Feng, therefore, she must carry out this act all the way to the end.

Ye Feng walked along with her, meanwhile, he also felt that Miss Lin's popularity was indeed extremely high.

All the way, several people frequently greeted her, they were both men as well as women. As the Chairman of the Students Council of Yanshan University, her interpersonal skill was naturally worth mentioning, it was like wherever she went, there always was someone who was familiar with her, and also greeted her.

The faint aroma lingering around her body greeted his nostrils, simultaneously, when their arms rubbed against each other from time to time, it seemed like all these things together were making him feel so mesmerising. To be together with such a heavenly beauty, even if she wasn't his woman, was still pretty enough to make the mood of any guy, ecstatic.

It must be said that the charm of Lin Shiqing was astonishing. Even for such a strong-willed guy like Ye Feng, merely walking together with her was enough for him to lose the control of his emotions. Suddenly he felt that his blood rushed to his head and made his heart beat a bit faster, and then it became all fiery.

If he were converted into one of the ordinary guys of Yanshan

University, then it could be said that he was really pretty good, but perhaps, still to speak anything in front of Lin Shiqing, would be something very difficult for him.

Shortly, they arrived at the side of a broad basketball court of Yanshan University. Early in the morning, a lot of boys had already arrived there for practice, they were pouring with sweat on the ground, the entire court was overflowing with youth and vitality.

From a distance, Ye Feng saw that the place was already overflowing with lots of boys, however, still in that crowded court, he saw an extremely dashing guy who was in a short-sleeved sweatshirt. Right at this moment, that guy broke through several guys, and quite smoothly, scored on an easy slam dunk.

“Cai elder brother, good job!”

A group of people shouted up to cheer him up.

“Is that Cai Shaohong?”

Ye Feng thought to himself, as he together with Lin Shiqing gradually approached towards him. Seeing him smiling cheerfully, while the remaining guys were cheering for him, it appeared like he finally had won the game, and was ready to take rest.

Very ordinary clothes, ordinary sports shoes, and in the name of adornment, there was nothing on his body, still, he was looking very fresh, totally cool, charming, and dynamic. He was nearly 6.2 feet tall, his stature was almost perfect, had a stunning jumping ability, coupled with ultra-high skills in ball games as well as interpersonal skill. Hence, for him, it could be firmly said that being adored and admired by Lin Shiqing was by no means could be considered as a coincidence.

Suddenly, in the middle of the crowd, a familiar figure popped up and caught the eyes of Ye Feng, he was Lin Xiuwen, the Sanshao of the great Lin Clan.

{Lastvoice : Sanshao – third son.}

“Why is your younger brother also there?”

Totally baffled, Ye Feng directly asked from the great heavenly beauty, Lin Shiqing.

“Are you speaking about Xiuwen?”

She said with a smile : “He has a pretty good relation with Shaohong, furthermore, he also adores him a little.”

Ye Feng listened, and thought that was this little boy really serious? Was Cai Shaohong really so strong and influential, that even Lin Xiuwen, who was such an egotistical and arrogant son of a great Clan, could worship him?

After the end of the match, Cai Shaohong came to the side of the court to take rest, simultaneously he started chatting with Lin Xiuwen.

“Cai elder brother, Xiao Qi is still not willing to accept, what to do?”

While holding the appearance of modesty, in order to take advice from Cai Shaohong, Lin Xiuwen said : “This is m first time bumping into this kind of a girl, which in return she didn’t give me any value, and on top of that, my elder sister is also not willing to speak nice words for me .....

“Man should be always strong, so, what are you afraid of?”

Cai Shaohong smiled with ease, then he patted Lin Xiuwen’s shoulder, and while passing a business card to him, he said : “By seeing your present situation, I can advise that you can consult this personage. Well, your sister has come, I should go now.”

His voice was full of magnetism, which really had the powerful attraction to any age of women, especially here in the university where there were several flirtatious girls. Last year, when he had just arrived, during that time, in the top-notch singers championship of Yanshan University, his voice had directly conquered the presence of almost all the girls, and had made the entire scene appear almost crazy.

Henceforth, it seemed like suddenly he jumped up so high as if with the help of a spring! The name ‘Cai Shaohong’, started showing up frequently in the campus forum of Yanshan University, as well as in Yanshan university’s girls gossiping topic. It was rightly said that ‘the

more one talks about something, the more popular it becomes over the time', just in less than a half year, these things made him become Yanshan University's popular idol, not only among the female students, but also among male students.

No matter from which perspective one would see, but one would notice that Cai Shaohong's everything was close to perfection.

At this point of time, he looked up, a very gentle smile was shining on his face then, as he saw Lin Shiqing walking along with Ye Feng towards him.

Merely the presence of Lin Shiqing was more than enough to gradually stop the movement of almost all the boys of the ground, especially seeing her bringing a guy along with.

Who was he?

Many people began to speculate Ye Feng's identity, simultaneously looked towards Cai Shaohong, since they had already become very curious to see what kind of gossip would take place among those three.

"Elder sister, you're here."

Lin Xiuwen was extremely happy, since he received a visiting card from Cai Shaohong. By putting it aside and while waving his hand at his sister, he ran up to her. On his hand, the Patek Philippe platinum wristwatch was shining brightly in the light of the morning sun.

That watch was representing the enormous money involved in it, which an average person could never earn throughout his lifetime.

Seeing Lin Shiqing together with Ye Feng, Lin Xiuwen's face turned dark all of a sudden : "Elder sister, how can you be together with this guy?"

"Xiuwen, zip it, don't make a scene."

Lin Shiqing smiled as she raised her white hand, gently ran her fingers through her beautiful long hair, then she kept her slender fingers on the shoulders of Ye Feng: "Little Ye is a very nice guy, later if you try bullying

him, then your elder sister will not talk to you.”

Lin Xiuwen listened and immediately looked at Ye Feng with a look which was even more hostile than before. Then he glared at him, as if the unsaid words his eyes were trying to convey was : Fuck, how could you dare snatch away my sister from me?

Ye Feng also looked back at him, and while wrinkling his eyebrows he thought, what was this guy trying to show by his expression? Was he in such an awful mood because he didn't like him as his brother-in-law, or because Ye Feng snatched away his sister? the playboy young master's disposition was really hard to figure out.

“Shiqing, won't you introduce us?”

Cai Shaohong smiled brightly, as he said that while taking a look at Ye Feng, as if he was very much interested in him.

“Little Ye, he is Shaohong.”

She said that smilingly, then to introduce Ye Feng to him, she continued : “This is Ye Feng, a grandson of my grandfather's good friend. He has been treating me as an elder sister.”

Ye Feng's facial expression instantly turned gloomy as he thought – fuck, when did he treat her or saw her as an elder sister?

Certainly, still he was unlikely to jump out to refute, anyway, he also hadn't planned to keep following her from now onwards. Hence, by totally ignoring this matter, he just carefully looked at Cai Shaohong, surprisingly the opposite party also looked him back. While the both parties were directly looking at each other, Ye Feng tried to figure out something but he didn't see any positive result.

“Hello, I'm Cai Shaohong.”

By maintaining utmost politeness, the handsome youth said that with a smile, his smiling face was looking very bright then. Truly, he was worthy of being the popular campus idol, even in the face of the legendary love rival, he still had the higher side on almost everything, since he was very calm, mild-mannered, graceful and gentle.

“Ye Feng.”

Ye Feng smiled back, but didn't say anything further.

He had a prime goal, he just wanted to confirm whether this Cai Shaohong was the same Cai Shao of the mysterious organisation. And for achieving his goal, of course, he couldn't blindly rely just on the exchanging words between them. Secretly, he decided to execute a tracking plan! By frequently changing his Camouflage technique to change his appearance, and by completely relying on his five years of Cultivation, tracking a person wouldn't be a difficult job for him anymore.

He had finally seen Cai Shaohong, now he knew what he looked like. Therefore, for him, it was not necessary to stay there any longer.

“Alright, now we have become acquainted with each other. You guys carry on, I have to go back to school to attend my classes, so, I'm leaving first.”

Ye Feng smiled and waved his hand, then immediately he turned around and departed.

Lin Shiqing was too late to stop him from leaving, by then Ye Feng had already left the basketball court. She felt a bit strange in her heart, why did she always feel that this boy was somewhat strange?

“Little Ye, I'll send you.”

Lin Shiqing said and tried to catch up with him.

“There is no need to, distance is not too far.”

Without looking back, Ye Feng continued walking, and right after taking two curved turnings, he disappeared without leaving any trace.

Helplessly, she just shook her head, but suddenly she thought of something, and turned her head towards Cai Shaohong, and asked: “Oh, that's right, a couple of days back, those nationality students who sprang up in a throng to fight, was it handled well?”

“Certainly.”

The handsome Cai Shaohong smiled : “I personally funded to help those two people to pay their school fees. The genuine difficulty-stricken students don’t get the opportunity to attain Scholarship benefits, which explains everything that the school’s scholarship application management isn’t operating perfectly, we can talk to the school leader to mention his opinion.....”

.....

Nobody knew that at present Ye Feng was looking for an aloof place, where he could use his Camouflage Technique. Soon, by using this technique, he turned into an ordinary short and stout male student, and once again returned to the side of the field.

He was going to change his appearance into a variety of images, so as to track Cai Shaohong all day long!

## Chapter 105 - Yanxi Villa District

---

Ye Feng suspected that Cai Shaohong was the same Cai Shao of the mysterious organisation, and to prove this point, he had the valid reason.

It wasn't like just their names were similar, but the more important thing which exactly matched was 'time'. On one hand, Cai Shaohong came to this country and started studying in Yanshan University one year ago. While on the other hand, at the same time, the mysterious organisation showed up and exterminated Southern Heavenly Gates, which was one of the four big gangs of Yanjing, and this incident also took place exactly one year back.

Moreover, Cai Shaohong had the US nationality, his father, as the chairman of the board of Pei Keang Group, used to carry out experiments on a new type of drugs, and was also involved in several other activities like researching gene science, and so on. Hence, there was enough reasonable motivation for Ye Feng, which gave birth to a doubt in his mind.

As the law of the jungle of the World of the Immortals, if someone had rolled about many years of Cultivation, then he could become proficient in several Immortal Techniques. On that basis, Ye Feng's tracking and counter-tracking skills had already reached the proficient level. In addition, in a modern metropolis, no one could see through his Camouflage Technique, letting Ye Feng carry out his tracking plan very smoothly and quite successfully.

In the morning, Cai Shaohong played basketball, at the same time, he also answered a few phone calls. Thereafter, he opened a coffee shop 'Red Cross', and then along with a subordinate of Student Council, he sorted out an important matter. After finishing these things up, he still appeared quite busy.

During noon time, he went to the cafeteria to have a meal together with



a bunch of boys. By looking at him, he didn't appear even a bit arrogant, instead was very amiable, like a modest gentleman. After finished eating his lunch, he attended an afternoon class along with several other boys.

In this process, Ye Feng noticed something, there was a guy who was very close to him, as if they were best friends. It seemed like he was the same youth from the morning, who looked like a celebrity, whom Ye Feng had seen outside Qi Qi Café, and to whom Lin Shiqing called "Little Zhao". After tracking them for one whole day, Ye Feng naturally came to know that this person was called Zhao Mingze. Although his disposition was a little girly type, but was very tall and handsome, his voice was like a very pleasant to hear type.

It appeared like Cai Shaohong had no connection with the mysterious organisation's Cai Shao, however, Ye Feng still recorded everything related to him in his mind.

In the evening, when they had their dinner, Ye Feng changed his appearance into an old man with the help of Camouflage, meanwhile, he also seized the chance to make two phone calls. However, while doing so, he was still close to his target, watching him attentively.

The first phone call he made was to Scar. However, after this phone call, Ye Feng had totally lost his mood and had turned a little anxious.

Regarding the prosecution of Xie Min and Xie Chengye, this matter was being handled by Scar perfectly without a hitch. Moreover, Scar had gathered his all remaining trusted men and started leading them, he also had rented a storied building for his office in the vicinity of Qingfeng Park, to ensure the better protection of Su Menghan. In addition, the incident which had taken place the day before yesterday, in Tianhua Casino, where several people were killed, that had been completely pressed down by Liu Lihui.

However, there was one more message which had totally disturbed him, actually the corpse of Zhao Yibei had disappeared suddenly, right before his cremation! Besides this, Scar had also consulted with the relevant sources, and collected the information that recently nearby

Yanjing, the occurrence of the disappearance of a lot of bodies had been happening frequently, but until now no one was found out. There were already numerous families of the deceased, who had become restless and started banging up.

Ye Feng thought that this affair needed to be clarified on the priority basis, because, after all, while protecting him, Zhao Yibei got shot and died. But the point was, who could dare steal the dead body of Zhao Yibei, and that also almost before his cremation?

However, he had no clue about this thing right now, hence he decided to postpone considering this matter for the time being.

Afterwards, he made a second call to Su Menghan, and asked the school beauty that if she wanted then she could ask her all three Uncles to come and participate in the trial of Xie Min and Xie Chengye. After all, wasn't Su Menghan's Grandmother their biological mother?

However, regarding this matter, Ye Feng let her think and take a suitable decision on her own.

They talked for a while, meanwhile, Ye Feng also informed her that he wouldn't return home tonight, which made Su Menghan very jealous. In the morning, he immediately vanished together with that beautiful woman, Lin Shiqing. Thenafter, the entire day, Su menghan didn't even see his shadow, and now was he just informing that he wouldn't return home tonight?

Ye Feng was helpless, he had already planned to track Cai Shaohong in the evening, therefore, he really couldn't return home at any cost. However, it was not necessary to give an explanation to Su Menghan, he just kept on saying sweet words in a coaxing manner for a while, in order to console her, and soon he took hold of her finally and settled this matter smoothly.

When he finally hung up the phone, he noticed that Cai Shaohong, who had been in his field of vision since morning, had finally started his movement. He drove an Audi to come out of the parking lot, it seemed like he might be returning home!

Ye Feng's heart quickly changed its gear and shifted to the action mode. From quite a distance, he was watching attentively at the shadow of Audi, as soon as it left, he quickly cast out Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace, and firmly followed him.

In Yanjing, there were many luxurious Villa Districts, such as Xishan Villa District, Aobei Villa District and so on. But the Yanxi Villa District was newly developed. In this Villa District, medical system and educational system were quite perfect, furthermore, hotel, golf, hot spring and other facilities were beyond imagination. Altogether, they had contributed towards making a superb surrounding and elegant living conditions.

Before, Su Xinchang and Xie Min used to live here in Yanxi Villa District .....

Cai Shaohong's car Audi, running all the way, finally pulled into the Yanxi Villa District.

Following him all along, Ye Feng also finally arrived there and looked at the entrance of that District. There was a formal security and gate guard, hence, now the point was, how should he go inside?

To still continue tracking Cai Shaohong efficiently, he immediately took a decision and quickly cast out Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace. And the next moment, he went close the edge of the wall and jumped up suddenly very high!

Considering his five years of Cultivation, to jump directly 4 or 5 meters high, was like a child play for him, he surmounted the infrared instrumentation easily, and then softly landed on a small cluster of trees in the Villa District, next to a small artificial lake. In the middle of that lake, there was a rockery, from where the gurgling water was appearing very soothing and elegant.

Without wasting any time in random observation, he quickly focused his vision on his target. He noticed that he wasn't very far from his car. Hence, after ensuring that he hadn't been found by the opposite party, he swiftly entered the Villa District. He couldn't just change into someone

by using Camouflage, or else, on the basis of Cai Shaohong's IQ, he could certainly, quite easily see through his Camouflage.

Therefore, to keep on following him, Ye Feng could only hide in the side of the artificial woods. Soon Audi stopped in front of a luxurious villa which was surrounded by water from all sides. As soon as Cai Shaohong got out of the car, Ye Feng noticed that he had already changed into a western-styled clothing, into a suit and a tie. Anyway, without even realising that he was being followed since morning, Cai Shaohong directly went into the house.

Ye Feng still wanted to keep up with him, therefore, he glanced around quickly. He saw a car, Mercedes-Benz galloped in from outside, immediately after them, however, it went ahead and stopped in front of another villa. The person on the driver's seat, wasn't that originally the assistant as well as the driver of Su Xinchang, Hu Meimei? In the passenger seat, there was a fat person who seemed to have a very high and respected position. However, Ye Feng didn't know his identity, could it be that this person, who had taken charge of Hu Meimei now, was Xie Min's Uncle?

However, Ye Feng wasn't the least bit interested in paying attention towards them, instead, he thought that whatever they were doing here, that had nothing to do with him. Hence, for him, ignoring them was the right decision.

He swiftly moved to one side, and without making any sound, he quickly came to the edge of the villa Cai Shaohong had entered. This was the time when the Sun was taking its leave from the sky, Ye Feng, while leaning against the window, could hear the gurgling sound of water coming out from the bathroom, as if right after getting back home, Cai Shaohong wanted to take a bath first.

“A good opportunity!”

Without giving a second thought, Ye Feng jumped in, and decided to search this villa thoroughly, without leaving anything unturned! Taking advantage of the time while the opposite party was taking a bath, to

thoroughly search the villa, and see if there was anything suspicious, was his prime objective for now.

The entire villa altogether has three floors, the outside wall had somewhat classical style tiles, there were all kinds of precious vegetation planted in the garden. At first glance, Ye Feng didn't notice anything suspicious.

He displayed Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace, and ran through the villa, thoroughly.

“If I have reached a decade of Cultivation, then by using Soul Search technique, searching this villa would not have become too much troublesome. I could have swept away the entire villa, and would have gotten a panoramic view .....

Ye Feng regretted in his heart, but soon when he came to the underground floor, in front of the entrance of the basement, and suddenly felt something spiritual, which jolted him crazily.

Actually, a strong aura of divine spiritual influence was spreading out from inside the basement!

“What is there inside? If there would be divine treasure, which has such rich divine and spiritual energy, then that means, it would be more than sufficient to enhance one's Cultivation up to 3 to 4 years, or even more!”

This feeling really startled him!

But right at this time, from the lobby, a strange sound passed on, it seemed like Cai Shaohong might have come out of the bath.

Therefore, Ye Feng immediately reacted.

## Chapter 106 - A Wretched Man

---

Ye Feng dodged and quickly left the villa without being discovered by anyone.

In such a villa, a sudden appearance of so rich divine spiritual influence was really very suspicious. There were two possibilities; first – Cai Shaohong was just an ordinary person, and he didn't know a thing about it, and second, Cai Shaohong had deliberately hidden something therein.

If the first possibility was true, then, in that case, perhaps Cai Shaohong wasn't Cai Shao of the mysterious organization, and the presence of that strong spiritual influence in the basement, must be the deed of some other person.

However, if the second possibility was true, then it could be said that this person turned out to be very suspicious. Almost 80 to 90 percent chance was there, that Cai Shaohong was the same Cai Shao of the mysterious organization. Under this circumstance, Ye Feng couldn't dare to take a risk and intrude into the basement.

At present, Ye Feng had just five years of Cultivation, moreover, he simply didn't have any clue what would be there in the basement. He just had a thought that like previously met "hidden pavilion master", if there would be a huge number of the same kind, inside the basement, then for Cai Shaohong, wouldn't it be like catching a turtle in a jar? Wouldn't he want to trap Ye Feng inside?

"I must thoroughly investigate this place as soon as possible, as I can feel such a strong divine spiritual influence, I can't give up at any cost."

Ye Feng thought and immediately left the place.

He was all prepared to wait for tomorrow. He decided that during the absence of Cai Shaohong, he would scout out here again. As for tonight, there was a channel which might be able to find any clue related to

mysterious organization's Cai Shao. And to achieve that, they must be trying to find out the whereabouts of one of the top three big gangs of Yanjing, 'Tian Gang' which was considered as the most powerful gang among all!

Heavenly Serpent Gang's Song Hu and Black Dragon Association's Dubang Long, both had been already killed by Ye Feng. Nowadays, he was looking for the boss of Tian Gang, then perhaps, he could use his hypnosis on the opposite party, and would force him to make a phone call to Cai Shao.

Anyway, to go on a trip to Tian Gang was not a big deal for him, but at present, he also had some important preparations to do for tomorrow's action.

As he was about to leave the Yanxi Villa District, exactly then while passing through there, suddenly his eyes fell on the nearby waterfront villa. Although, he hesitated a bit, but he stopped his footsteps and decided to have a look at the scene.

Because something from inside the villa had caught his eyes. A fat man was there in a room, and while staring at a photo frame he had in his hand, he was almost drooling over it.

This fat man was the same man who came with Hu Meimei a few minutes ago by Mercedes-Benz. But the thing which made Ye Feng entirely stop his footsteps was the picture in that photo frame.

Su Menghan!

Although that was an old photograph of Su Menghan in which she was looking very young, probably it was clicked during her junior middle school, but by then, she had already turned out to be very sweet, pretty, slim and quite graceful girl.

"How does this fat man has a photograph of Menghan?"

Somewhat baffled, Ye Feng scowled at him defiantly.

In any case, seeing the wretched fat man staring at Su Menghan's photo and on top of that, also drooling all over, how could Ye Feng stand

it? Although this trivial fat man had developed this kind of cheap thoughts for Su Menghan, but wouldn't it be a big shock for her if she ever heard about it?

Just when he wanted to turn around and go inside the villa, exactly then he noticed that the fat sudden froze to the spot, with his eyes wide open, as if he was hit by the storm all of a sudden. He saw, the door of the room, where the fat man was, suddenly opened silently, and the scene which appeared before Ye Feng's eyes, made him totally speechless.

Semi-naked Hu Meimei!

Perhaps she just took a bath, her pitch-black hair was not blow-dried, her snow white captivating skin was looking beautiful all exposed, and her soft buttocks appeared very tight and erect. Very coquettishly, she threw a seductive and flirtatious look towards that fat man, as she entered the room, and all the way arrived in front of him.

“Indeed as expected, this woman, Hu Meimei, is so flirtatious in nature. It seems that when she used to follow Su Xinchang, during that time, wouldn't she ever try to seduce him.....”

However, her semi-naked body couldn't attract him, because whether compared with Long Wan'er, or Su Menghan, or the woman from this morning, that Lin Shiqing, obviously Hu Meimei's figure was awfully inferior to them. He could ignore rest of her bodily features, but her obviously looking loose and saggy chest was looking very feeble, and very inharmonious.

Moreover, after taking off her make-up, Hu Meimei's face wasn't looking bright and clean, she had a slight freckle. If her facial appearance was compared with Ye Feng's top beautiful ladies, then it could be said that there was a huge difference between them, like they were totally the polar opposite.

“Director Xie, don't look at this picture ~”

While saying that, Hu Meimei arrived at the side of the dreadful fat person, and coyly, quite prettily said : “Come on, speak out quickly, this



Su Clan's villa, how much money you could get by selling this villa, you've said that you would give it to me as a present."

The fat man was really the person of Xie Clan! Moreover, Su Xinchang wouldn't have imagined that at present, his villa would have been occupied by these two fellows. Also, it looked like Su Menghan's photo, Su Xinchang must have forgotten it here.

"Darling rest assured."

At this moment, that wretched fat man was in the bosom of Hu Meimei. All excited, he put out a hand to make an effort to pinch her on her chest, and while doing so, he smiled and said: "Asset evaluation report hasn't come yet, so don't worry. Actually, this little girl, Su Menghan is so small, so attractive, tsk, tsk."

Seeing him so indulge in the photo, Hu Meimei turned a bit jealous, and a feeling of hate took birth in her heart. However, she couldn't do anything, only said: "Well, how did she become so interesting to Director Xie?"

"She has been very interesting to me, for a long time."

The wretched man's heart was all fiery just by thinking about her. He was simply unable to tolerate anymore, he had seen Su Menghan several times before, always wanted to get his hands on her, but never got the right opportunity. He was fond of this kind of fresh, pure and innocent young girl. In the past, he had played a lot with Su Menghan, however, never got the chance to have a taste of her.

Currently, he was busy imagining the fresh and charming face of Su Menghan, even more than that, he was visualizing a scene where to clean her body, Su Menghan smoothly slid down her cloth, which made his heart very fervent, and as an effect, suddenly he pushed Hu Meimei down on the sofa.

The beastly nature of that dreadful fat person overtook him, he quickly took off his clothes. His greasy big stomach exposed out, while he turned towards the sofa and threw his naked body onto her.

Bang!

Right at this time, from the side of the bed, Ye Feng directly jumped in, and kicked hard in the big stomach of the wretched fat man, then after, he kept on kicking him one after another, several times until he was sent flying! His heavy body, like withstanding great pressure fell to the ground, and then he turned around and rolled to the wall, instantly he threw up foam from his mouth.

“Who are you!”

All of a sudden, panic-stricken, semi-naked Hu Meimei asked that, and immediately jumped up and opened her mouth to scream. However, Ye Feng had already done the preparation in advance. In a flash, he cast out Dragon Claw Hand Technique, immediately his zhenqi sprang out in the empty space, and rushed crazily towards Hu Meimei, and the next moment it pressed her mouth firmly between the fingers.

Then quickly he waved his hand, and cast out Moon style Dragon claw hand. Immediately, by using it, he threw her directly on the body of that wretched fat man. Their bodies bumped into each other terrifically. As a result, she got hurt severely and immediately spat out a mouthful of foam.

“Who I am is not at all important, the important point is .....

At this point of time, Ye Feng displayed Camouflage technique and changed his appearance into a very ordinary person. While speaking that, he picked up the photo frame, which had just been cast aside by that fat man.

“Look into my eyes. Hereafter, whenever you see this girl, it’s like seeing the God, now you don’t have any evil thoughts of violating her!”

Ye Feng looked into their eyes, and by taking advantage of their unconsciousness, he smoothly pulled them under his hypnosis. Such hypnosis could greatly damage the brain of the person who was under hypnosis; at least this could reduce his IQ by twenty percent. However, this wretched fat man and Hu Meimei were already the worst type, hence Ye Feng didn’t have any scruple.

In the World of the Immortals, if someone would dare to visualise his woman like this fat man, then he would be absolutely beheaded by Ye Feng on the spot. At present, he just hypnotised them, that was quite an easy punishment for them.

Bang! Bang!

Immediately, he hit those two fellows and made them unconscious. Afterwards, by carrying Su Menghan's photo, he jumped out of the villa and came out of that beautiful District.

The dim light of night had gradually engulfed the entire Yanjing city, the moon also became visible in the sky now, and finally the cool breeze had also started blowing gently!

The dark and stormy night looked like filled with murderous intent. Ye Feng had a premonition that perhaps in the evening he might kill people, moreover, he wouldn't kill just one or two.

By using multiple masks, he covered his face again.

Tian Gang was active in the entire eastern side of Yanjing, and its prime business was gambling. It had set up several secret underground casinos, perhaps, others didn't know how to go there, but Ye Feng had the information channel of Scar, naturally he didn't need to worry about that... ..

## Chapter 107 - Luring The Snake Out Of Its Hole

---

Tian Gang, although if compared with Heavenly Serpent Gang, had a few letters less in its name, however, in terms of strength, it was a superbeing powerful gang. It was said that in addition to its own strength, it also had a strong support of the military, from behind the scene, therefore, it was considered as the most powerful gang among all the three gangs of Yanjing.

Although Ye Feng knew the location of several underground casinos operated by Tian Gang, but didn't know where the boss of this gang was hidden.

Therefore, he had no other option left but to go to an entertainment clubhouse, which was located in the eastern part of Yanjing. The underground second floor of this clubhouse was the largest underground casino of Tian Gang. Most of the powerful and influential officials of Yanjing from all walks of life, had formed the circle of high-end gamblers of this casino. That was the reason why it had become unusually famous.

“I have to go and take a look, then only, I can inquire about the whereabouts of the boss of Tian Gang.”

Wearing a mask, Ye Feng moved towards this entertainment clubhouse. Soon, he reached there and directly found a young fellow standing at the entrance of this club. There was a secret password a newspaper reporter had secretly passed it to Scar. As soon as Ye Feng said that secret password to that clubhouse guy, immediately he was brought to a noisy and crowded place. He noticed that the underground second floor was brightly lit, and was echoing with a babel of voices. Obviously, the

popularity of this underground casino was not hidden.

How many people would be there, who had lost almost everything in this casino and had gone bankrupt to the extent where their undergarments were also taken away?

There were a lot of people who were capable of winning in this game of gambling, but in real, there were very few of them who could always win continuously. According to the theory of probability, if someone has been gambling continuously, the final result will be definitely losing everything, at most, it is just a matter of time.

As far as gambling was concerned, Ye Feng didn't know a thing about it, but if by any chance he had to gamble, then, he couldn't afford to lose a single penny. Although, he didn't have learnt Soul Search Technique yet, but merely relying on Camouflage was sufficient to beat several people, and turn this casino upside down.

While cutting his way through the crowd, Ye Feng arrived close to a gaming table surrounded by numerous people. The atmosphere around it was quite hot and was continuously surging upwards. The people were over excited and had their eyes fixated on that gambling table.

“So, Eldest Master Lin, have you lost everything? If you have really lost everything, you must leave quickly, don't affect the cheerful mood of other people.”

At this time, from one side, a gloomy sound with a touch of relish, passed to Ye Feng's ears.

Eldest Master Lin?

Ye Feng turned his head at once, and as expected he really saw a slightly fat guy, pouring with sweat, was sitting in front of a gambling table. From the side, he could see that he was a 27-28 years old a bit healthy youth, and his facial features were really a bit resembling Lin Xiuwen.

While sitting opposite to him was a young dealer of the casino, with green and yellow dyed dual coloured hair. He was appearing quite calm and careless even under the huge pressure, and was looking at Eldest Master Lin, with his corners of the mouth turned upwards, forming an arc.

There were many people around that gambling table, however, not a single one was putting up any stake. Obviously, they were letting Eldest Master Lin play.

“Well, isn’t it two hundred million? Two hundred million chips again!”

Eldest Master Lin seemed like he couldn’t swallow even one breath, by waving his hand, he commanded a nearby standing servant.

Ye Feng thought that wasn’t it a huge amount of money involved in it? It seemed like the status of the youth, who was playing against Eldest Master Lin, was not low in this underground casino. If Ye Feng had to ask him, then he could draw a lot, about the whereabouts of the boss of Tian Gang, out of his mouth!

He went towards that gambling table, and heard some people standing around were talking very slowly, as if they were whispering while pointing their fingers towards the back of Eldest Master Lin.

“Its true that Eldest Master Lin still has an enormous amount of money, he just waved his hand for two hundred million, indeed, he deserved to be called as the person of Lin Clan.”

“Rubbish! Even if he is the member of Lin Clan, still it may be possible, that the other people of his Clan won’t give him so much money probably.”

“Right, this Lin Zhiqing, is the Deputy Director of Yanjing’s Finance Bureau, and is in the charge of tax administration, politics, customs duty and budget editing centre. As I can see,

**most probably he has diverted the public funds!”**

**The status of all the gamblers present on the scene was definitely not low, even though it wasn't as huge as Eldest Master Lin, still, who didn't know the truth and inside situation of Eldest Master Lin?**

**Ye Feng had also gotten a general understanding of the situation. Lin Zhiqing, who was known by this name 'Eldest Master Lin', was a 27-28-year-old man, had already acquired the position of Deputy Director of Yanjing's Finance Bureau, and in this generation of Lin Clan, he was the oldest one on the basis of age, and had advanced into the political circle, as fostered by his Clan.**

**If compared with Lin Zhiqing, whether the person was Lin Shiqing or Lin Xiuwen, both were still young, hence, their future path was still uncertain.**

**Also, Ye Feng didn't have any idea that how did Lin Zhiqing get infected with the disease of gambling and embezzling public fund to gamble in this sort of a noisy place? As everybody knew, this kind of news used to spread with a lightning fast speed. Soon, it would reach the ears of his political opponents.**

**He was one of the members of Lin Clan, so, who could dare mess up with him? It wasn't so simple! Once he fell into the clench of his political opponents, then they would definitely find out some other way to topple him. Even if there was the shelter of Lin Clan, but still they couldn't guarantee to protect him at all times.**

**Moreover, he also didn't know that how Lin Zhiqing could be so blockhead, wasn't it like compelling himself towards the blind alley on his own?**

**Of course, Ye Feng wasn't even the slightest bit inclined to know the ins and outs of this guy, since anything related to this guy was totally uninteresting and irrelevant to Ye Feng in this**

given situation.

Ye Feng, wearing his mask, looked at the casino's young dealer sitting opposite to Lin Zhiqing, and thought that how should he trap him so that he could hypnotise him? But soon, Ye Feng shook his head, as he noticed that using hypnosis in this crowded place would be very suspicious. Because before using hypnosis, he must figure out that among all these people who were constantly looking at the gambling table, who was not a slick and smart customer?

What if he got exposed while doing so, hence it wasn't a nice idea at all. Moreover, he couldn't guarantee that among all these people, there wouldn't be certainly a single person who would be a Martial artist.

Therefore, Ye Feng finally decided to give up his idea and play some tricks on this table, and then lure the boss of Tian Gang out of his den! Casinos were the largest source of income for Tian Gang, so, he would make the casino lose hundreds of millions on this table, then only the opposite party would hurriedly make his appearance.

Soon, a new round began.

Lin Zhiqing together with the young dealer started playing, the game was all about throwing three dice, and then guessing whether the total points were big or small. In addition, there were specific points of betting. If the guessed number came below that specific number of points, then the financial loss would be very high.

**Shua! Shua!**

The young dealer threw the dice first, simultaneously his corners of the mouth turned upwards, revealing his iniquitous smile as he looked at the anxious face of Lin Zhiqing. Very quickly, he threw his dice on the table and said: "Place your bet!"



**“Small!”**

**Without any hesitation, Lin Zhiqing promptly pushed out a ten millions chips, directly pressing them towards the “Small” side.**

**By putting on a very treacherous smile, the young dealer said : “Isn’t it true that Eldest Master Lin has become very cautious now, as he didn’t dare to bet on any specific point?”**

**Immediately he flipped over his hand and uncovered the lid of the small box in which those three dice were. At the same time, without wasting any moment in useless thought, Ye Feng’s Zhenqi quickly sprang out beside him, immediately after, by using Camouflage, he suddenly changed those three dice into 1, 2, 3.**

**“Won!”**

**Seeing that, Lin Zhiqing’s happiness suddenly burst out. While on the other hand, the young dealer tightly wrinkled his brow, because he was damn sure that he had thrown out 4, 4 and 6, how could they turn into 1,2 and 3?**

**He glanced around and suddenly his sight paused on the masked face of Ye Feng. For a while, he stared at him, but then he didn’t care and turned away. Actually, there were a lot of people, who used to come to the Casino wearing masks, therefore, it wasn’t strange for him seeing masked people. Ye Feng wasn’t the odd one out there and really didn’t deserve his special attention.**

**“Once again.”**

**The young dealer shouted out : “Everybody can place bets. Eldest Master Lin, what do you think about this?”**

**He thought that he should wait to see who would win the maximum time, then he could be able to know who was involved in the dirty tricks. This guy was either a very prudent**

**sinister, or he was very confident in his own skill, since he didn't believe that he would make any mistake. Therefore, while he shouted out to encourage people to bet, at the same time he also sent an SMS secretly.**

**Although, Ye Feng was indirectly helping Eldest Master Lin in this gambling game, but only because it was supporting his plan.**

**His prime goal, wasn't it to draw the boss of Tian Gang out of his hiding?**

**“Of course, no problem.”**

**Lin Zhiqing nodded, his slightly fleshy face was sweating all over.**

**As soon as Lin Zhiqing's words fell, the bet on the table began to liven up. During the next round, Lin Zhiqing placed his bet on “big”, however, several other people together with him also placed their bets, and detained the points.**

**When the lid was removed, again without thinking anything, Ye Feng hastily cast out Camouflage and turned those three dice into 4,5 and 6.**

**Indeed it was big!**

**All of a sudden, the complexion of that young dealer darkened, while Lin Zhiqing overwhelmed with happiness, back to back he hit two consecutive victories, so was this the time to break the rhythm?**

**In the next round, when the young dealer rolled the dice, Lin Zhiqing directly placed his bet on “18” point, by pushing out 200 million chips!**

**Upon seeing this, the group of people standing around, thought that Eldest Master Lin had really lost his mind. Though the chances of the loss would be ten times higher on point ‘18’, but at the same time, it could be so easy as well, he**

**just had to throw out three '6' points. However, the probability of three '6' was very low!**

**In response, that young dealer smiled, so much courage that he bet on point '18' and pushed out 200 million, did he by any chance lose his consciousness?**

**Nobody knew that seeing the same, nearby standing Ye Feng also smiled, his corners of the mouth curled up, as he could see that now the chance had finally arrived, when he could succeed in making this casino lose 200 million!**

**If this really happened, then it was crystal clear that the young dealer would definitely not continue sitting still, patiently.**

## Chapter 108 - Another Masked Man

---

While smiling iniquitously, the young dealer uncovered the lid of the small box. However, he remained stunned when he saw the point.

The people standing around the table also looked at the point and were also similarly stunned!

There were really three '6', while adding them together, it was equal to 18 points!

Lin Zhiqing suddenly stood up, his face was glowing brightly with excessive happiness, however, he still had maintained a calm and composed stature. Was this like the Heaven was helping him? What kind of situation this was! This sort of small probability game had been luckily encountered by him today!

The young gambler's face immediately turned black, fuck, it ended up with a loss of 200 million, ah! As far as the case of other gamblers was concerned, since the amount was so negligible, that it wasn't worth pulling the attention of that young dealer.

But while talking about Lin Zhiqing, the young dealer's involved money was 200 million .....

His face clouded by a gloomy expression, and suddenly he pushed a huge pile of chips towards Lin Zhiqing.

Since the opposite party was Eldest Master Lin, so he couldn't dare to repudiate a debt. Wasn't that 200 million? He wanted to play again! At his level, if no one would cause any disturbance, then he could win back in an instant.

He was frequently sweeping his vision all around, soon he noticed a masked man who was looking very suspicious. Because, when that masked person had arrived at the side of this gambling table, since then he hadn't spoken a single word with anyone, and hadn't bet even a single

time. When that dealer looked at him once again more carefully, he felt a gloomy aura around him.

“Let’s play one more time!”

The dealer quietly locked his attention at Ye Feng, and once again began to shake the dice!

“I bet on ‘9’.

It seemed like Lin Zhiqing had already considered himself as the Mandate of Heaven, therefore, without giving a second thought, he pushed forward 100 million chips directly while betting on a specific number. The frequency of loss at this particular number was three times higher, however, if he won, then he would directly earn 300 million, which would be a huge profit, an unusual profit!

(Lastvoice : Mandate of Heaven - it’s a political theory of ancient China in which those in power, were given the right to rule, from a divine source.)

From one side, Ye Feng looked at and sneered secretly in his heart. To him, Eldest Master Lin really didn’t seem a logical and smart person at all, he was rather excessively greedy. Therefore, sooner or later, he would lose everything, including his undergarments.

However at present, Ye Feng was actually taking pleasure in helping him, after all, helping him was indirectly like helping himself. He was the only Eldest Master Lin, who could put forward such a huge amount, for gambling.

While opening the lid, that dealer quietly fixated his eyes on Ye Feng’s action, simultaneously, sent an SMS to notify something to someone.

“It’s really 9!”

A group of people exclaimed aloud, but Ye Feng was still standing and watching quietly from the sidelines, totally unperturbed. As for that young dealer, he wanted to see Ye Feng in action, as if Ye Feng would cast out Camouflage Technique in front of his eyes, how naïve he was.

But right at this time, Ye Feng felt two dangerous breath passing on, all of a sudden, directly from behind, which sent a shiver down his spine.

He promptly turned his head and saw two tall figures, clad in a huge deep brown and grey windproof coat, with their heads closely wrapped by the cloth hat, were moving towards him from two different directions, separately, quite quickly!

“Oh shit, not good, isn’t this the same gorilla I had encountered before? Who have thought that it will actually appear again at a place like this!”

The razor-sharp mind of Ye Feng instantly came into action, as he knew that that the situation had changed at once. In addition, he didn’t know the ins and outs of these gorillas, most likely he would just use Camouflage Technique before these two fellows could realise anything.

Without thinking much, by using his foot as a pedal, he sprang up very high, and directly crossed the whole gambling table at once!

As a result, in astonishment, the surrounding people started shouting out loud. However, Ye Feng wasn’t bothered by their screams, he just grabbed the collar of that dealer, and with slightly light footsteps, like a wind, he dashed towards the exit of the casino, and ran outside.

But those two tall figures, without uttering a single word, also chased after him while breathing vigorously.

Along with that young drunken dealer, Ye Feng was stumbled blocked on the road by them. But, quickly he hit one of the tall figures heavily, and layer upon layer that tall figure bumped against the road, and all of a sudden with a “Kacha” sound, his several bones were broken!

This sudden incident which took place in the casino, had turned almost everyone dumbfounded.

What was going on?

Lin Zhiqing’s eyes were wide-opened, fuck, he was just about to win 300 million, why was that dealer caught by someone and was carried away? Now, who would calculate the result of this gamble?

Basically, the already noisy casino had become a bit more noisier now.

.....

However, outside the clubhouse, carrying the young gambler by his collar, Ye Feng had already put to use Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace, and had already covered over a hundred meters of distance. At this moment, his stature flashed and he jumped to a deserted park.

“Let go of me! You have dared to disturb the domain of Tian Gang, consider yourself dead .....

Although the youth was scared to death, but he still tried to threaten Ye Feng like this.

“Shut up.”

Ye Feng with a “Pa” sound flung a slap on his face, simultaneously, he snatched his cell phone from his hand, and looked at it. To his surprise, he found that this guy hadn’t sent any message to his boss, rather, had sent an SMS to other two men.

Those two men were the attendants who used to guard these two hidden pavilion masters.

“What these hidden pavilion masters are, merely four limbs of the body, but no brain, they are nothing but a kind of a simple-minded monster .....

Ye Feng thought that, as if he had probably made a conjecture of the present situation.

This young dealer was originally the head of this casino. If he lost more, then that would be his own responsibility, it wasn’t worthwhile to notify Tian Gang’s boss. Let alone this matter, he just sent two hidden pavilion masters today, making the situation even more unscrupulous.

Ye Feng was quite aware that certainly because of the death of Song Hu, Dubang Long, and other people, the mysterious organisation had become somewhat cautious. That was the reason why it had arranged the so-called masters in this place, which was operated by Tian Gang.

Unfortunately, for Ye Feng, these two “gorillas” weren’t worth paying attention to.

There was a secluded park in front of Ye Feng, he quickly moved towards it, at the same time, those two tall figures, wrapped in a huge robe, also immediately pursued him, all the way by crashing and damaging several street lights, making the already dim park, become darker.

Crash, bang!

Crash, bang!

As the crashing sound of street lights resounded, simultaneously the screaming voices of several men and women also resounded from the park, immediately various dishevelled youth jumped out, and escaped toward the distant place in abundance.

“It’s the time!”

Seeing almost everyone present in that park had disappeared quite quickly, and the whole environment was dark and alone now, Ye Feng suddenly stopped his footsteps and threw the young dealer aside on the ground.

Immediately, an orangish-red Zhenqi condensed sword flashed out!

Ye Feng, while wielding the long sword, raised his head and looked at those two tall figures. His mind was all prepared to take a move, he started condensing his Zhenqi in his foot, and quickly activated Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace. Soon, the afterimage of Ye Feng was almost present everywhere in the entire dark park, making those two pursuing “gorillas” puzzled and helpless, and in confusion, they started randomly throwing hits foolishly.

Shua! Shua! Shua! Kacha! Puff!

With a lightning fast speed, Ye Feng moved, and his orangish-red Zhenqi sword flashed in the dark park, and soon, he truncated the head of one of the gorilla, making it flew and heavily fell to the nearby bushes!



“This is a human .....

The scene which just happened in front of that young dealer's eyes, made him froze to the spot.

Earlier, he had witnessed with his own two eyes, that these two “masters”, who were sent by his boss, punched and shattered a marble table in just a second, they were absolutely the living proof of superior force! But now, how could this man in the mask be so flamboyant, that he chopped down the head of one of the “masters”, as if he was not cutting a head, but a cake?

Although this young dealer was a high-level personnel in this crime world, but still he had never ever seen such scene, where a person chopped down the head of someone!

Fortunately, blood didn't spray out much, and the scene didn't turn out to be very bloody and heart-chilling. However, this incident bowed a seed of doubt in the heart of this youth, he thought that somehow these two “masters” were appearing very strange, was it a robot?

When Ye Feng's sword hit it's body, at that time, that young dealer had heard a metal intersecting sound, moreover, it had been beheaded yet no blood rushed out, no wonder that young dealer would guess so.

Puff!

This time, Ye Feng again cut off the head of another gorilla, and both of them collapsed to the ground heavily. That was the end, now they couldn't move again.

“Where do you want to run away?”

Ye Feng sneered as he turned back to see the youth, who was trying to escape, in the meantime, he congealed his Zhenqi sword, and immediately launched a Defensive move, that was Dragon Claw Hand-Cloud style!

It was the second move of Dragon Claw Hand, which directly grabbed the body of the dealer, and caught him in the empty space.

Being caught spatially like this, wasn't a rare experience everyone could

experience here and there. Was it possible, that the young dealer would have ever encountered this kind of situation? Immediately, this thing jolted his heart out, and he got scared to the extent where he even peed in his pants.

However, unfortunately, Ye Feng had no time to pay attention to his facial expression.

Because, not far away, in the shadow of the bushes, a somewhat gaunt figure quietly appeared, and attracted the attention of Ye Feng.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

A clear applause passed on, and it turned out to be another masked man!

Who was he?

Ye Feng quickly grabbed the young dealer, and looked towards the opposite party vigilantly. That person's face, just like Ye Feng, had a mask on.

## Chapter 109 - *My Enemy's Enemy Is My Friend*

---

Two masked men, encountered each other, in a secluded dark park, not very far away from the casino of Tian Gang. The difference was, Ye Feng's face mask was a white grimace face, while the opposite party had a black skeleton face mask.

Through his mask, Ye Feng stuck his eyes at the opposite party, and in a sinking voice, asked : "Who are you?"

"Don't be so nervous."

The skeleton masked man stayed still, raised his hands, and with a chuckle, said : "As the saying goes, my enemy's enemy is my friend. So friend, may I dare to ask your ultimate goal, isn't it Cai Shao?"

As the word went out, the razor-sharp mind of Ye Feng started racing instantly.

This guy, how did he even guess that his ultimate goal was Cai Shao? Moreover, he also said that 'my enemy's enemy is my friend', after all what was his identity?

"In good faith, I would like to show you my identity."

The skeleton masked man smiled softly, as he took out a silver token from the bosom of his western-styled clothing suit. He tossed it twice in his hands, and then lifted it in front of Ye Feng's eyes in order to show him.

Southern Heavenly Gates!

These three characters made Ye Feng instantaneously understand the identity of this fellow.

A year ago, when the mysterious organisation had just come into light, by using his enormous power, it had immediately eradicated the complete existence of Southern Heavenly Gates, which was one of the big

four gangs of Yanjing. And as the rumour spread, it not only eradicated this gang, but had also slaughtered its whole family, making the entire gang completely disappear from Yanjing.

Was this human skeleton masked man, by any chance, the member of Southern Heavenly Gates?

No wonder that the enemy's enemy is a friend. Because of that Cai Shao, this guy's hatred was certainly deeper than Ye Feng!

"Well, correct, the enemy's enemy is my friend."

Ye Feng pretended as if he was now relieved.

Bang!

However, all of a sudden a muffled sound echoed everywhere, making the heart of Ye Feng skip a beat. Promptly he looked up and saw that skeleton masked man had pulled out a pistol and fired a shot directly towards him!

Of course, his target was not Ye Feng, but it was that young dealer, who was still in Ye Feng's clutch. Bullet precisely hit his forehead, making him perish instantly.

"After knowing my existence, it was impossible for me to still let him alive."

The skeleton masked man said faintly.

"The marksmanship is quite good."

Ye Feng smiled, and tossed the body of that young dealer off nearby dense bushes: "Perhaps we really can cooperate."

So easily, he could kill the man of the so-called great Tian Gang, Ye Feng was finally almost confirmed that this masked man was indeed standing on his side.

"Soon people will start arriving here, let's go to some other place first, then we'll talk about the rest of things."

The skeleton masked man said while looking around.

Although it was a remote park, but still it had been the favourite spot of a lot of young couples. Just a few minutes back, almost all people had run away out of fear, but soon some other new couples might come. And if they would notice the corpses, then Ye Feng along with that masked man, would certainly get caught in some big trouble. So, the early they would leave this place, it would be better for them.

In any case, because of the technique used by Ye Feng, the police could definitely not find out his identity, moreover, in this case, two gorillas were involved, it was quite normal that the general police wouldn't be competent to process this matter.

Both of them, after mutually arriving at an agreement to maintain a distance of ten meters between them, before as well as after leaving this remote park, finally left that place. The man in the skeleton mask was leading the way. He was walking towards the western side along a small alley.

Naturally, Ye Feng was calmly following him.

This skeleton masked man was hidden for a whole one year, so it was quite obvious that he might be knowing about Cai Shao much more than him, and most probably he would also be knowing where Cai Shao would be hidden right now.

If something went wrong, then Ye Feng would immediately wave his sword to flatten him then and there.

Threats must be resolved immediately, he wouldn't be lenient!

“Just now the guy I shot was the head of Tian Gang's casino, and was actually called as Fang elder brother. He used to kill several people every day, who weren't able to pay their gambling debts. He had also led several people towards the road of losing everything, which immediately followed by bankruptcy. He truly deserved to be damned .....

While leading the way, the skeleton masked man slowly continued explaining things : “And tonight, his duty was to let Lin Zhiqing gamble and lose all public funds, and leave behind a big evidence, so that they could start their preparation for the big action”

“Is Lin Clan the prime target of Cai Shao?”

Ye Feng asked.

“More or less, yes.”

He smiled and in a very soft voice, said : “He has been sent by Pei Keang Group to China, with the assignment to control and nibble away the property of Lin Clan gradually, to disrupt the economy of the country China, so that they can develop prohibited drugs and drift them into the domestic market of China. Furthermore, their other plan is to nurture a group of loyal subordinates here in this country. ”

“Pei Keang Group ..... as expected, Cai Shaohong is Cai Shao!”

Immediately coldness flashed in Ye Feng’s eyes.

“Correct, as for Lin Clan, Cai Shao’s plan is very detailed. His plan is to threaten Lin Zhiqing, to control Lin Xiuwen, and lastly for Lin Shiqing, his wants to completely take possession of her ..... to resort to extreme measures!”

With somewhat regret, he continued : “Unfortunately, his secret effort is too perfect to the extent that even if these matters would be told to someone else, still no one would ever believe it.”

Indeed, such a grand plan, even someone would plan to implement like this, he would totally fail, because it was simply inconceivable. Must be said, if this planned came out successful, then the economy of the entire country China would collapse, making the person with high aspirations, seek the sudden huge profits from it!

Moreover, during weekdays, usually Cai Shaohong, with the help of his performance in Yanshan University, had also paralysed almost everyone, apart from the present guy, the man in the skeleton mask.

“So, how about you, how did you know about all these things including his plan?”

Overwhelmed with relish, Ye Feng asked : “It seems that you have that identity which can make him trust you.”

“Ha-ha, if you can get rid of him, you’ll know.”

That masked man chuckled softly and said : “Let’s take your current strength, even if you have huge power, still it would be best for you to not to butt heads with him, because just like the previously encountered gorilla, there are over a hundred of that kind, who are lurking around Cai Shao .....

When Ye Feng heard that there were more than a hundred gorillas, his heart suddenly felt a chill. As per his current strength, to bump into a single one of them was really a bit difficult for him to manage. And now this shocking fact there was over a hundred of such strange thing. But the important point was, where had been they usually kept?

Without waiting for Ye Feng to fire his question once again, the skeleton masked man again continued : “Since, Lin Zhiqing’s things have been resolved, then let’s go nearby Yanshan University. It may be possible that he might try to accomplish one of his plans tonight.”

“What plan?”

Ye Feng asked that with some doubts.

“In some way, get control of Lin Xiuwen .....

The masked man chuckled and said: “Thus, from here onwards, you can see the calamity without end. There is a person, the young lady of Xiao Clan, she will be sacrificed in this plan. But, I, alone as a single person, just by relying on my strength, can’t dare to destroy this plan.”

The young lady of Xiao Clan?

The moment he listened to his words, suddenly a scene flashed in his mind, from today’s early morning, when Cai Shaohong and Lin Xiuwen were talking something , while they were on the basketball court.

Was it Xiao Qi?

Ye Feng suddenly again recalled another scene from today’s morning, when he was in that café, and had met that lively and pretty young girl as well as the owner of that case. For a while, he slightly pondered about

her. Although at present, he only wanted to deal with Cai Shaohong, but if Xiao Qi was involved in his plan, then no matter what, but his plan wasn't appropriate from any angle.

“Let's go to Yanshan University college first to have a look around, afterwards come along with me to deal with that Cai Shao, what say?”

In a sinking voice, Ye Feng asked.

He was still constantly thinking about the basement of Cai Shaohong's villa, where he had sensed divine spiritual influence.

“It depends on whether you have enough strength or not for that.”

The skeleton masked man also replied in a low voice and then said that he himself was just an average person, even if he had a pistol, but still he couldn't pose a threat to Cai Shaohong. Otherwise, he had been ambushing for one year, had long been personally killed Cai Shaohong.

In order to exterminate Cai Shaohong, he could only rely on Ye Feng!

“Don't take it wrong, but wait for an opponent, he is really worthy of consideration.”

In a somewhat dignified tone, the skeleton masked man said while holding a serious looking expression on his face: “If you have the sufficient strength to defeat him, then without further ado, let's go to deal with Cai Shaohong and resolve this matter once and for all, tonight!”

As for this match, Ye Feng thought that it was worth paying attention to his rival, could it be that his rival was a very powerful martial artist from the world of the martial arts?

However, he didn't ask anything. Not long after, they advanced towards the western side, and soon approached near an apartment close to Yanshan University, the environment around was pretty good and quite calm.

The night breeze was blowing gently, it was fairly peaceful nearby the apartment, after all, it was night, naturally the residential area couldn't be too noisy.



“The young lady of Xiao Clan has rented a house here .....

As the skeleton masked man said that, exactly at the same time, Ye Feng’s facial expression terrifically changed.

What he saw was under a street light, near the apartment, a lonely figure was standing, his body was wrapped in the tattered cloth, as if he was a beggar. But Ye Feng knew it wasn’t a beggar, because the facial features of that figure under the ragged cloth, was actually –

Zhao Yibei?

Wasn’t his corpse missing, then how did it appear here? Moreover, his face was pale and looking horrible, could it be that it also had something to do with Cai Shao’s plans?

Ye Feng’s heart shivered by this thought, while at this time, on the other side, as soon as Zhao Yibei’s figure seemed to have found these two people, it quickly jumped into a small alley nearby, and all of a sudden disappeared!

## Chapter 110 - The Rising Dead

---

Firstly, why the corpse of Zhao Yibei would appear here, and secondly, obviously it didn't have the vitality, but still how could it move?

Ye Feng's heart felt a slight chill, and in a sinking voice, he said: "Where does Xiao Qi live? I'll go over there first."

"It's the fourth floor of the second building ....."

The skeleton masked man barely said that, and the next moment, without wasting even a single second, Ye Feng rapidly moved his footsteps, simultaneously he cast out Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace, and quickly advanced towards the mentioned building.

In the World of the Immortals, there were lots of Immortal Techniques related to dead bodies, such as Dead Soul Control, which was used to control the corpses of all the living creature of the world. Moreover, it could also preserve their fighting strength before death. It is rightly said that fierce are not afraid of dying, Immortal cultivators, who used to practice this Immortal Technique, were used to be incredibly formidable.

But on this planet earth, was there the existence of this kind of thing?

Ye Feng didn't think about it much, he just ran quickly, and soon arrived in front of the second building. When he looked up, his eyes fell on something, which suddenly gave his heart a severe jolt. He saw a guy standing on the balcony of the third floor of that building, and was also wrapped in a ragged cloth, just like Zhao Yibei.

"Tornado Axe?!"

Totally thunderstruck, Ye Feng's heart took a sudden jump. That tall and sturdy fellow, with a pale face, and clearly visible scars on his throat, wasn't that the trace of him being struck and killed by the flying knife of Zhu Bainiao? Ye Feng still clearly remembered the scene from before, back then, Tornado Axe's corpse was perfectly disposed of by Scar and

Zhao Yibei. They had carefully thrown his body in the flowing river, then how could he be here?

The point was why on the earth he appeared here at this place. But still, Ye Feng couldn't afford to waste a single second to ponder about it right now.

Without waiting for the Skeleton masked man to keep up with him, he directly made an effort, started condensing his Zhenqi under his foot and quickly leapt high. Coupled with the explosive force of Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace, he jumped directly to the third floor's balcony!

If it was someone else from the world of the martial arts, then let alone five years of Cultivation, even if he had a decade of Cultivation, still it was next to impossible for him to jump so high, unless he used to practice any exquisite and incomparable subtle dodge. However, Ye Feng, merely relying on the strength of his Zhenqi, partnered with Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace, easily enhanced his jumping ability, which was completely beyond the reach of ordinary people, and that also from several times.

Shua!

An orangish-red Zhenqi sword condensed out at once and immediately dazzled in his hand. By the moment Tornado Axe could react, his head was sliced off from his body, and was immediately kicked off. As a result, he heavily collided with the wall of the balcony, and his entire body burst out, making his whole body turned into one handful of ashes!

Upon seeing this scene, Ye Feng's heart stopped beating for a while and his mind blanked out, wasn't the corpse of Tornado Axe an entity? Then, in that case, just a moment ago, that Zhao Yibei's .....

"As expected, he would be here ....."

Right at this time, an old and gloomy voice spread out from inside the room attached to this balcony, along with the cries of a young girl asking for help, as well as a snarling roar of a youth, as if he had lost his senses.

"Xiao Qi, Lin Xiuwen? And who is that old man?"

Ye Feng's heart was extremely vigilant at this moment, he immediately cast out Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace once again, and by grasping his long orangish-red Zhenqi sword, moved fast and in one fell swoop broke open the balcony's door, and rushed in the room.

He saw a pink-coloured bedroom of a young girl, where Lin Xiuwen was standing in a very strange condition. His upper part of the body was bare, his whole body's skin was rising red, he was constantly making a sound like a general roar of a wild beast, while pushing a young girl to the corner. This young lady, wasn't she Lin Shiqing's best friend, the young proprietress of Qi Qi Cafe, Xiao Qi of Xiao Clan?

But right now, Xiao Qi's originally brightly glowing and lovely face was clouded by the two obvious bloodstains and her snow white nightgown was totally ragged. Holding high-heeled shoes in her hands, she was continuously pounding towards Lin Xiuwen, as if she was trying to kick him out.

Very obviously, the beastly personality of Lin Xiuwen had completely taken over his mind, and had made him delirious. And in this delirious state, he was trying to harm Xiao Qi. However, Xiao Qi was not that kind of a girl, who used to sit and wait for her death, instead, on the one hand, she was crying for help, while on the other hand, she was protecting herself from him.

Besides those two people, there was no one else in the room.

"Just now, was that the voice of an old man?"

Ye Feng was still super vigilant, instantly leaving behind a remnant afterimage, his stature flashed and appeared in front of Xiao Qi, and in a fraction of a second, he kicked that crazy Lin Xiuwen, making his whole body flew, and with a huge force, "bang" he bumped into the wall.

"Are you all right?"

Ye Feng, wearing a grimace face mask, turned his head and by looking towards Xiao Qi, inquired.

"Don't have ..... is all right ....."

The girl was frightened to death, a pair of her water-laden eyes was looking at him fearfully, accompanied with vigilance.

Who was this man in the mask? How did he come from the balcony? Everything appeared very suspicious to her! Although this masked man saved her, by kicking the delirious and brutal Lin Xiuwen off her body, but perhaps it was like, just escaping from a wolf's den, and entering into the tiger's den.

Ye Feng noticed that she was being extremely vigilant and scared seeing all these strange things, but he didn't care about it, rather he walked towards Lin Xiuwen, while being very careful. Soon he discovered that really there was no other person in the entire room, which gave him a little relief.

He looked at Lin Xiuwen, and saw his both eyes were blood red, he was bare-chested, his skin was boiling hot, and he seemed to have completely lost his consciousness. Moreover, he was also making whooshing sound unceasingly. After being kicked by Ye Feng, he collided with the wall, and had gotten badly injured, to the extent where he was really struggling hard to crawl and get up.

“What happened to him?”

Ye Feng asked in a low voice.

“I don't know either.....”

That young girl, Xiao Qi had a lingering fear: “just a moment ago, an old man hurtled to come in together with him, he thought to me, to me .....

“An old man?”

Ye Feng asked again.

“He is .....well, human?”

Xiao Qi looked around, but didn't see any figure, which a bit startled her.

Bang!

Just at this point, not very far away from this building, a light sound of a gunshot rang, making Ye Feng's ears set upright suddenly.

“You take care of this fellow, I'm going out now.”

Without thinking much, Ye Feng directly threw a punch at the delirious Lin Clan's Sanshao, and made him unconscious on the spot. Then he jumped a step out from the balcony. This was obviously the sound of a pistol, without a doubt it would be fired by that skeleton masked man, did he encounter any enemy? Perhaps it would be that old man!

For a moment, Xiao Qi's mind was stunned by seeing Ye Feng jumping down directly from the balcony of the third floor.

She followed him and quickly ran to the balcony. When she looked downwards, she saw there was no one around. Quickly she turned around and looked towards the floor, where the collapsed Lin Clan's Sanshao was lying, all these things sent a shiver down her spine. Panic-stricken, she jumped towards a pillow and pulled out her cell phone, and hastily dialled the number of Lin Shiqing.

.....

While on the other side, Ye Feng jumped down from the balcony, and rushed towards the place from where the sound of gunshot transmitted a moment ago. That was an apartment community, in the centre of which there was an artificial lake, and was surrounded by a flake bamboo grove. As soon as Ye Feng arrived there, he saw a dozen of gloomy figures in the bamboo grove, and immediately his complexion changed.

Almost all these fellows were familiar to him!

He saw Zhu Bainiao, the two fellow apprentices of God Fist Gate, Luo Li and Luo Lei, as well as Zhao Yibei, and so on, altogether there were total eight pale-looking corpses wrapped in the tattered cotton robe. All these fellows had together encircled the Skeleton masked man, but since he had a gun, so for his self-defense, he shot in the middle of the forehead of Zhu Bainiao's corpse, but still he couldn't succeed in impeding the footstep of the other party.

Seeing the Skeleton masked man surrounded by a group of corpses, Ye Feng hurriedly rushed towards him, simultaneously started condensing Zhenqi under his foot, and hastily cast out Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace, in order to rescue him from this tight encirclement.

“These things..... what’s going on here?”

Ye Feng stopped his footsteps near the artificial lake, and then in a sinking sound, asked that from the skeleton masked male.

“These fellows are being controlled by an old man, who have come from Western Hunan, and who is a necromancer.”

Obviously, the Skeleton masked man knew the ins and outs of this thing, therefore in a dignified tone, he continued: “Since he couldn’t stay any longer in the church, so he came to Yanjing, and happened to meet with Cai Shaohong .....

A necromancer, the creator of walking dead?

Ye Feng didn’t know anything about this kind of sect, but he made a conjecture that he might belong to any martial arts sect. And as hinted by the skeleton masked man, he quickly understood the situation that his opponents were not these walking deads, but that old man.

“Ga, Ga, Ga.”

Suddenly, at this time, a gloomy and hoarse voice, echoed from all directions : “I am a necromancer! I was actually framed by a traitor, therefore I fled from there. Thanks to the kindheartedness of Cai Shao, who provided shelter to me. Now, I handle matters for him. By the way, I don’t know what’s your name, your Excellency?”

“Mo Jiuge.”

Ye Feng faintly replied to him, and as usual, once again he tightened up his guard.

Only the voice of that old man could be heard, he was hidden somewhere in the dark, which was very much disadvantageous for Ye Feng! Moreover, those eight pale corpses, which were under the control

of this old man, were also gradually approaching towards them.

Ye Feng looked at the pale face of Zhao Yibei and suddenly his heart sank.

This youth sacrificed his life for him, but even after his death, he had no peace. He got caught up by some necromancer, a creator of zombies, and now was being controlled to harm other people. This thought really left Ye Feng's heart with a very unhappy feeling!



## Chapter 111 - Black Jar Of Souls

---

Ye Feng, while standing near the artificial lake, looked up and stared fixedly at the deadly pale face of Zhao Yibei, and thought to himself that just few minutes back, the moment he chopped off the head of Tornado Axe by his sword, that guy immediately turned into the ashes.

“That boy, Lin Xiuwen, just like all these fellows, is also brought under the control of that old man, and is being manipulated to take hold of Xiao Qi.”

The Skeleton masked man continued saying dignifiedly : “Mo Jiuge, if you can vanquish this old man, then with your real strength, we can launch a sneak attack on Cai Shaohong, and most probably, we’ll succeed!”

“Understood.”

Ye Feng nodded, however, he didn’t show any emotion, like laughter, anger, sorrow or happiness.

At this moment, by using all his strength, he was just trying to find the trace of the old man, but unfortunately, in the entire bamboo grove, in addition to these two people, and those eight deadly pale corpses, there was really no one around!

“If I had ten years of Cultivation, then by using Congealing Spellbound Technique, I could have been able to sense all the things, which happened to exist within a radius of hundred meters of range, not even a single thing could have been able to escape my awareness, but unfortunately .....

While keeping his eyes all alert, Ye Feng was secretly thinking that if he would really succeed in taking hold of the divine spiritual influence, which he had seen in Cai Shaohong’s villa, then might be he could boost up his Cultivation up to 10 years in one fell swoop. In that case, he could

go to the East China Sea to find Su Feiying, with certainly an increased level of confidence.

Cai Shaohong must be killed!

When those eight deadly pale corpses encircled them, then among them, Luo Li and Luo Lei, these fellow apprentices took initiative and brandished their clenched fists 'Paochui Fist', towards the artificial lake, aiming directly at Ye Feng. They had learned this technique during his lifetime, in God Fist Gate.

While dealing with these two fellows, Ye Feng couldn't be lenient. Immediately a long Zhenqi sword condensed out in his hand, and with a super fast pace, he instantly evaded the fist of the opposite party. And in return, very swiftly he engraved his sword in the heart of those two corpses, one after another, and with a sound "Puff" their bodies turned into dust!

Seeing this scene, the nearby standing Skeleton masked man's body trembled out. Obviously, he had a great confidence in the strength and fighting efficiency of Ye Feng. He had a pistol right now in his hand, but even though he would use it to fight with these walking deads, but still it wouldn't have any effect on them. However, this guy, "Mo Jiuge", he just used a random sword, and really succeeded in defeating these corpses so easily, he was really too domineering and aggressive!

Ye Feng blurred afterimages flashed all over the place, accompanied with his sword, which fluttered about in the air merely 2 or 3 times, and instantaneously annihilated seven pale corpses, making them turn into a handful of ashes and mix up with the bamboo grove. Finally, only one corpse left and that was Zhao Yibei. But as usual, Ye Feng couldn't bring himself to finish him up, by his own hand.

As he was busy dealing with these walking deads, he was also paying equal attention to his surroundings. Though this bamboo grove was quite distant from the neighbourhood buildings, but still not a single suspicious shadow of any human figure appeared there, making him temporarily lost in thought.

It was close to impossible for that old man, to cast out a magic on his own body, to make himself Invisible. Besides, in this bamboo grove, there was no such place where anyone could hide. Since the old man was currently controlling these corpses, then obviously the distance between him and these corpses wouldn't be too far.

Finally, he had a feeling that now the appropriate time had arrived when the old man must be on the verge of coming out from his hidden position.

Ye Feng was thinking about this while pretending that he was dealing with Zhao Yibei's corpse, meanwhile, his whole body entered the garrison state!

While on the other side, when the man in the skeleton mask looked at the swiftly fluttering stature of Ye Feng while dealing with these corpses, then he finally heaved a sigh of relief. As he concluded after seeing Ye Feng's form that "Mo Jiuge" was such a powerful fighter with excellent swordsmanship, therefore, even if he would come directly in front of Cai Shaohong, then obviously he wouldn't necessarily lose.

Just after a while .....

While Ye Feng was just busy in his own thought process, suddenly, from behind him, a sound of a sudden burst of water passed on, followed by a fuzzy appearance of a person quickly leapt from the water, and threw a hit directly towards Ye Feng.

There was completely no prior indication of this move, and it seemed like this strike was as fast as the lightning!

"Dead Soul Claw!"

An old and gloomy voice suddenly rang in the ears of those people. No wonder, why this old man couldn't be traced out anywhere, since he was hidden beneath the artificial lake surface!

"Too good!"

From fairly a long time, Ye Feng had been waiting for the opposite party to show up!

He had already guessed that the opposite party must be hidden under the artificial lake, but since he didn't know the depth of his opponent's strength, therefore, he didn't dare to take the initiative into the water. However, just now, when the opposite party tried to sneak attack, he was immediately seized by Ye Feng. Somehow unintentionally Ye Feng established a superiority over him, all of a sudden!

The old man promptly turned around to free himself from the clutch of Ye Feng, however, Ye Feng didn't loosen his grip, instead, the Zhenqi within his body started boiling up and suddenly burst out. And just in a fraction of a second, he activated Dragon Claw Hand Technique, and instantaneously grabbed the body of that old man who was totally unprepared, and hurled him heavily on the ground.

Bang!

Consequently, the dust flew upwards, making the sky covered with dust, accompanied by the water droplets, which also flew upwards from the body of that old man. At this time, the old man appeared incomparably distressed in this lonesome and quiet bamboo grove.

“Dragon Claw Hand Technique's second level!”

Awestruck, the old man shouted out loud!

Nowadays, in this world, there was a handful of strong fighters who could assign away their inner qi from their bodies. Even though the old man had achieved two decades of Cultivation, still it was extremely difficult for him to reach that level.

Just now the old man used a technique – Dead Soul Claw, if by any chance, he had been able to release his inner qi out of his body, and had also known the second level of this technique, then by combining them with his Dead Soul Claw technique, he could have been able to easily perturb his opponent, by disrupting his listening and seeing ability, later on making him a walking dead! Unfortunately, this old man couldn't attain that, or else Ye Feng would have become one of the corpses by now.

Bang Bang Bang!

The reaction time of the Skeleton masked man was also noticeably quick, immediately he raised his pistol, and slid on the ground in front of the old man, and opened fire on him.

“What a pity, your Cultivation is too low!”

The old man said that gloomily, at the same time, his the current of his inner qi started circulating crazily within his body, and very strongly he suddenly shaken off the fetter of Ye Feng’s Dragon Claw Hand, and hurriedly his whole body flashed and sprang towards another side, easily evading the three bullets fired by the Skeleton masked man.

Although Ye Feng had never thought that this old man would make him suffer a defeat, even though he had used the second level of Dragon Claw hand, but the disparity of Cultivation between these two sides was noticeably huge. When the old man used his force, then it really became very difficult for Ye feng to cope up with him.

Shua!

Ye Feng stature flashed and he waved his sword very forcefully towards the old man, however right at this time, that old man pulled a very hard thing out from his bosom and instantly blocked his attack. By looking at it closely, Ye feng noticed that surprisingly it was a black-coloured jar, just like a funerary casket. Although that jar suffered a very severe hit by Ye Feng’s Zhenqi condensed sword, but still, it was totally unscathed. Instead, it emitted an intense counter-shaking strength, which had almost thrown Ye Feng heavily on the ground.

“Could it be that ..... it’s a magical instrument?”

Ye Feng’s heart shivered at once.

This magical instrument already carries the divine spiritual aura, but it belongs to the lowest level of magic in the World of the Immortals. Although it is the most preliminary level of instrument, but whatever it is, it’s still a kind of magical instrument, which if compared either with the strong fighters, or with the sharp weapons, still it is considered as completely reborn, with several other definite strange features!

“Boy, do you think that since you succeeded in killing Hai tang of ‘Happily married couple of swords’, so, you can deal with me, this old man very easily? Ga Gaga, too naive!”

The old man smiled hazily, and extended out his withered old hand, soon one after another, he shot that jet-black jar several times.

Buzz!

As a result, a dull sound rang everywhere, immediately followed by a burst of invisible energy drilled out from the jar, and gradually took a form of a human body in front of the old man, and in no time, it took a solid form.

A pale corpse again!

“Hai Tang?”

Ye Feng looked at the appearance of that corpse, and thought that didn’t he kill this crazy woman of Heavenly sword palace in the Changbai Mountains? This black jar, what was it after all?

“Mo Jiuge?”

The old man smiled gloomily: “You could rest assured that after you death, your soul will also be collected by this old man in this Black Jar of Souls. And when the time comes, I would make you a walking corpse like others, and then you would help this old man in running errands .....

The Black Jar of Souls?

Collecting soul of the people, if that being the case then obviously the soul of Zhao Yibei had also been captured in that jet-black jar?

If he could grab this Black Jar of Souls.....

Ye Feng slightly wrinkled his brows and quietly looked towards the nearby standing skeleton masked man.

Ye Feng’s Cultivation was not enough to deal with the old man, if he wanted to strike and kill this old man, the so-called necromancer, then at first he must join hands with the Skeleton masked man and should try to launch a joint attack on him. Although the man in the Skeleton mask

had just a pistol right now, but still if it would be used smartly at crucial moments, then it could definitely also do wonders.

However, Ye feng must not forget this point, that although this necromancer dodged all three bullets very swiftly and effortlessly, but it didn't mean that this old man wasn't afraid of bullets. If he was shot in the head, then he would definitely die on the spot.

The Skeleton masked man knew the current situation quite well, therefore, he just gave a slight nod.

The two people must act together, it had become absolutely necessary now!

## Chapter 112 - Turned Into A Retard

---

The old man was a martial artist with 20 years of Cultivation, definitely, he was a challenging opponent for Ye Feng right now.

If Ye Feng had at least ten years of Cultivation, then he could have very easily defeated this old fellow, and had made him kiss the ground. But currently, the strength of his Zhenqi was insufficient to cope up with him, which had ultimately prevented him from acting recklessly before his opponent, the old necromancer.

“You two little babies, don’t exchange flirting glances with each other.”

When the old man saw Ye Feng and the masked man looking at each other, he gloomily grunted: “Cultivation disparity is quite huge, it’s not so easy to make up, therefore, must remember, next year, the same today, is going to be your death anniversary.”

His voice just fell, and instantly the corpses of Hai Tang as well as Zhai Yibei acted, they quickly advanced towards the skeleton masked mask. While on the other side, in order to get rid of Ye Feng quickly, the old man himself jumped into the battlefield and displayed his technique – Dead Soul Claw!

But this time, the old man was fully prepared, certainly, it hadn’t been so easy for him to decipher how to break himself free from the clutch of Dragon Claw Hand Technique of Ye Feng.

Ye Feng, on the other hand, was calmly analysing the whole situation and noticed that it had become a little unfavourable for him.

It wasn’t like currently, the only threat to him was that old man with 20 years of Cultivation, but that skeleton masked man was also indirectly a huge threat to him. Ye Feng couldn’t fully bestow his trust on him. Therefore, he needed to be very attentive all the time, and always keep his guard on, for his better protection from both the sides.



Hypnosis and Camouflage, these two techniques were his most preponderant Immortal techniques, which he could put to use with ease while facing a veteran martial artist of this world. If he launched these techniques at a crucial moment, then regardless of the fact that his opponent had 20 years of Cultivation, still his opponent wouldn't stand the slightest bit of chance against Ye Feng. These techniques would force that old man to prostrate himself on the ground in front of Ye Feng.

As for Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace, Ye Feng had already noticed that the agility of the opposite party was almost at the same level with his own, hence merely leaning against the strength of his speed to score a victory, wouldn't be apparently a good idea. In other words, his speed would only become a means .....

Ye Feng's heart had already made a firm resolve that by all means, he must constantly keep an eye on the Black Jar of Souls, which was in the hand of the old man. Immediately after setting his heart all prepared, he cast out Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace, and the next moment, his remnant afterimages flashed all over the bamboo grove.

“Hmm, do you want to flee?”

The old man sneered and as a response, he also promptly cast out Dead Soul Claw technique. In a flash from the white layer of his withered hand, his inner qi burst out like a breeze, and instantly cut through the two blurred images of Ye Feng, and started following his main body!

Merely relying on the speed of Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace was really not enough to cast off this old man from pursuing him, as Ye Feng's position was constantly being watched by him, quite attentively and unwaveringly.

But suddenly, under the mask, Ye Feng's facial expression suddenly changed, and the corners of his mouth curled upwards.

Naturally, he wasn't planning to run away like a scaredy-cat, instead, he quickly displayed Camouflage Technique, simultaneously, made a strategy that for the time being, he must continue running throughout the bamboo grove. By using Camouflage Technique, he might not

probably succeed in concealing his breath from the opposite party, but if it would be used throughout the bamboo grove and for a longer period of time, then he might succeed in defeating this old man.

Bang!

Suddenly, a sound of a gunshot passed on from one side, again.

The masked man, while confronting the corpses of Zhao Yibei and Hai Tang, calmly and unhurriedly fired a shot, so as to stop the movement of the fast approaching figure of Hai Tang for a moment. Afterwards, he directly jumped into the artificial lake water, suddenly making a burst of water splashed out with huge force.

Although the two pale corpses chased him to the lake, but when they didn't find any trace of him, they suddenly felt somewhat helpless and distracted. As they had been commanded by the old man to must take hold of the Skeleton masked man. But now, since the masked man had jumped into the water, leaving them totally aimless and helpless, so how could they follow the order and grab him now?

Since they had no option left, so they turned around and advanced towards the old man. Now they wanted to help the old man while dealing with Ye Feng. But at this moment, "Bang" again a sound of a gunshot echoed, actually that masked man peeped out from the water, and fired a shot directly into the head of Hai Tang's corpse!

"Grrr grrr ....."

All at once, both the corpses got attracted towards the artificial lake and they started pacing back and forth around it, by completing ignoring the existence of Ye Feng.

Ye Feng was already quite alert and had been paying attention to the situation around the artificial lake all along. He thought that the Skeleton masked man was really pretty intelligent, he knew how to pin down these two troublesome fellows. Meanwhile, Ye Feng had also found out that the Black Jar of Souls, which was in the hands of that old man, that was actually used for condensing souls out into the form of the walking corpse, besides that, the fighting efficiency of each corpse was

directly proportional to its lifetime experience.

For example, currently, the congealed soul of Zhao Yibei was very weak, while on the other side, both the speed as well as the strength of Hai Tang were way bigger than Zhao Yibei.

In case the corpse of Hai Tang managed to besiege Ye Feng, most probably, it would make him fluster. At present, the move of that Skeleton masked man had given a convenient chance to him to open the door.

In the hot pursuit of the old man, Ye Feng had already circled around the bamboo grove twice. However suddenly something hit his thought process, and soon a simple strategy, to deal with this perplexed situation, cropped up in his mind. Immediately his mind started processing everything, and the next moment, his Zhenqi sprang out from his body, making his strategy finally come into existence!

In the eyes of the old man, currently he was in this piece of a bamboo grove, but suddenly it turned into the clouds and mist, like a fairyland in general, making him feel a cold shiver in his heart.

What just happened?

Originally this was a big night, but, the sky over the bamboo grove had a strange brightly illuminating light, wasn't this also too weird?

Not good, was it done by that masked man, Mo Jiuge?

The old man immediately reacted, as he quickly noticed that the situation had become a little different now. Hence, by applying his full strength, he quickly launched his technique Dead Soul Claw. Immediately two withered arms appeared, as if they were enclosed in a layer of deathly-pale inner qi.

Forest of bones!

Dead Soul Claw Technique was a martial arts' technique, which was used to hit the target and kill him terribly. The old man finally decided to enter this battle with his full might, since he had a feeling that something was wrong, and this boy, Mo Jiuge was not normal, he was a

little strange. If the old man didn't come up with his full force today, then, sure enough, he would lose this fight awfully!

He stamped his feet heavily, one after another!

Soon, from the ground, his inner qi suddenly jumped out and quickly condensed to take the form of the Forest of bones. The scope of this technique was quite broad, to the extent where it captured the entire bamboo grove, with its non-discriminatory attacks.

“You are late.”

Ye Feng chuckled, at the same time he climbed up a relatively more robust bamboo, and then he looked downwards, at this terrifying killing technique displayed by the old man.

In fact, the whole bamboo grove didn't change a bit, just because Ye Feng used his Zhenqi to flow in a particular direction, which had formed an imaginary picture of fairyland in the eyes of the old man. But when the old man used his technique, and instantly his inner qi released from his body, and took the form of the Forest of bones, exactly at the same time, Ye Feng disappeared from the ground and climbed up a bamboo. If he hadn't acted fast, he would have died by now.

Unfortunately, Ye Feng had already done his preparation beforehand, quickly he climbed up the bamboo and jumped upward.

The moment the Forest of bones appeared, it seemed like it just flashed for a second, and then instantly disappeared in the bamboo grove, under the moonlight without any trace.

Without thinking much, Ye Feng jumped down from the bamboo, and with a lightning speed, he arrived in front of the old man, waved his sword, and directly jabbed it into his chest!

.....

After getting done with the old man, naturally, Ye Feng and the Skeleton masked man didn't return to Xiao Qi's apartment, since for them, killing Cai Shaohong was the most important thing for them, at this moment.

However, there in Xiao Qi's residence, finally twenty minutes later, Lin Shiqing rushed over. As soon as her red Lamborghini arrived there and got parked outside in the neighbourhood, she quickly ran like the wind to the third floor, her pretty figure was appearing very fascinating.

"Xiao Qi, what's the matter, is everything fine, are you alright?"

Lin Shiqing pushed open the door, burning with anxiety and impatience, she shouted out loudly.

But soon she noticed that there was no trace of Xiao Qi anywhere in the room, only her younger brother, Lin Xiuwen was there, lying on the ground totally unconscious.

She quickly ran up to him, and swayed his shoulder in order to wake him up. As expected, soon Lin Xiuwen woke up from his stupor by hearing her loud words.

"Xiuwen, speak out quickly, where is Xiao Qi?"

Anxiously, very impatiently, she hastily asked that. She had received a phone call from Xiao Qi few minutes before, asking her to immediately rushed over to her apartment. But now Xiao Qi had disappeared, then how could this thing make Lin Shiqing feel at ease?

But fairly soon, Lin Xiuwen's reaction made her dumbfounded.

"Ah, ah, ah?"

Lin Xiuwen slowly sat up, and with an expressionless face he looked at Lin Shiqing, at the same time, saliva slid down his mouth, as if he had lost his mind. Moreover, he was looking extremely sluggish, with incomparably delayed facial expression.

"Xiuwen, what happened to, Xiuwen?"

Suddenly Lin Shiqing remained stunned.

Her brother, Lin Clan's Sanshao, had turned into a retard?

## Chapter 113 - Frames Him

---

Soon, Lin Shiqing informed this matter to her father, Lin Detian.

Currently, the head of Lin Clan was Lin Detian, and as for Lin Shiqing, she was the only daughter of him. While the other young masters like Lin Zhiqing, Lin Xiuwen, and so on were the children of other family lines of Lin Clan.

Although the resources of entire Lin Clan was mostly in charge of Lin Detian, however, his several other brothers couldn't be ignored as well. The only reason why Lin Clan had been considered as the number one family of Yanjing was because the Lin people of his generation, used to work collectively, and their joint efforts were totally inseparable.

“What, Xiuwen, him?”

When Lin Detian heard the news that Lin Xiuwen had somehow lost his senses, he couldn't just sit still and ignore this matter.

This was indeed a very important matter!

Who didn't know that Lin Xiuwen, who had somehow turned into a retard, was the most lovable and favourite grandson of Lin's Old man. Certainly the old man, Lin Hongchuan would go crazily when he would hear this news, and would absolutely raise a Tsunami throughout Yanjing city and turn the entire city upside down!

After having a talk with Lin Shiqing, Lin Detian hung up the phone, and decided to immediately rush over to the residence of Xiao Qi and personally examine this matter more closely. Since this matter would have a tremendous effect on several things, therefore, he just couldn't let it publicise everywhere.

But at this moment, again Lin Shiqing made a phone call to him immediately.

“Dad, Cai Shaohong just now gave me a phone call.”

The crisp voice of Lin Shiqing passed through the phone.

“Huh? So what did he say?”

Lin Detian slightly wrinkled his brows.

“It was a masked man who came to Xiao Qi’s residence.”

In a very dignified tone, she continued : “Not only Xiuwen was injured by that masked man, but Xiao Qi had also been abducted by him, there is no trace of her anywhere .....

Some time before, when Xiao Qi had called her, before she could tell her anything about the current situation, she was forcibly interrupted by someone to hung up the phone. So, Lin Shiqing didn’t know any detail, like what exactly happened there.

“How does he know?”

Quite intelligently, Lin Detian pointed out this crucial point.

“Because, Xiao Qi had called him first, for the help.”

Although Lin Shiqing had also some doubts, but still didn’t want to think much.

Since Cai Shaohong normally used to act very perfectly, making the girls have the feeling of utmost safety around him. Moreover, because of Lin Shiqing’s relationship with Cai Shaohong, Xiao Qi used to follow him very closely, hence they had become familiar with each other. Therefore, her making a telephone call to him and asking him for the help, was by no means seemed inappropriate.

“A masked man .....

Lin Detian heard that, and pondered for a moment:. “I got it, you immediately take Xiuwen to the hospital, let’s see how the situation is.”

“I’m already on the way.”

She said: “Oh, by the way, one more thing Dad, Cai Shaohong said that the ultimate goal of this masked man is most likely him, so Dad you see

.....”

“Got it.”

For a while, Lin Detian thought about this matter and nodded his head.

Obviously, he knew who the masked man was. Wasn't he that genius martial artist who had a good friend of Ye Feng? Most likely, Ye Feng wanted to succeed in this love battle, as who didn't know what Cai Shaohong was for Lin Shiqing and what were her feelings for him?

“I won't let your beloved have an accident.”

Lin Detian said that and then hung up the phone. Afterwards, he immediately started the arrangements by assigning people to go and stay around Cai Shaohong's villa. At the assigned place, they were supposed to just sit back and wait for the target to show up! It wasn't only to ensure the safety of Cai Shaohong, but the prime motto was also to capture the masked man.

After having a talk with her father, she thought something while being a bit confused.

Although Cai Shaohong was said to be her lover, but for her, every time she thought of him, she never felt any sweet and happy kind of feeling, instead her feelings for him was the same as her feelings for everyone, just numb and nothing else.

Was this the feeling of love?

No, definitely not.....

As the member of Lin Clan, each and every action of her should be taken very cautiously, even if it was love. She must place the family benefits at the highest priority than anything else.

Cai Shaohong, though he seemed to be perfect, but she didn't feel anything special for him. Actually, she had no attraction towards him. Just for the sake of her family, she considered him as the most appropriate candidate for her.



She couldn't help but recall her first meeting with Ye Feng, which took place today in the morning.

Could it be that she could only either choose Cai Shaohong for her family interests, or Ye Feng in order to please her grandfather?

Did she have just these two options left?

She took a quick glance at her brother who was lying on the passenger seat, dead asleep and was still salivating, as if he had no control on his brain. She shook her head, since it was really very difficult for her to believe. The only thing she knew that if by any chance, the masked man was really Ye Feng's companion, who had taken away Xiao Qi, and was also responsible for this miserable condition of Lin Xiuwen, then she would never forgive him at any cost.

.....

While on the other side, at present Ye Feng naturally didn't have any idea that he had already been framed by Cai Shaohong, as he very smartly shifted the blame onto him completely.

In that bamboo grove, Ye Feng laid a spell all over the grove in order to confuse that old man, and then very smoothly he exterminated him and grabbed his Black Jar of souls. After the old man's death, he instantly killed Hai Tang and Zhao Yibei's pale corpse, making them turn into ashes and scatter on the ground.

When all these things came to an end, then the Skeleton masked man finally came ashore from the middle of the artificial lake.

After killing the old man, they threw his body in that artificial lake, and without wasting any further crucial second, they dashed towards Yanxi Villa District with an extremely fast speed. Whether it was the masked man or Ye Feng, both of them knew the location of Cai Shaohong's villa very well, and they had a feeling that most probably he would be in his villa at the moment.

They just wanted to rush over to his villa as fast as possible, and then erase his existence from this world!

However, the ultimate goal of Ye Feng was to get his hands on the divine spiritual influence, which was hidden in his basement. Regarding this, he certainly couldn't tell this to the skeleton masked man.

All the way, he continued examining and exploring the Black Jar of souls, however, he couldn't discover the mystery. It was just an ordinary looking black jar, which was filled with some bone's ashes.

"There must be the soul of Zhao Yibei inside this Black Jar of Souls, but most importantly, it can't be preserved for a long time. So, I just need to wait for my Cultivation to hit at least ten years, then I'll be able to use Gathering Soul Technique, to summon his soul from this jar....."

Ye Feng also thought that this jar would be definitely a very precious and unique tool of that zombie creator. Moreover, it seemed like the status of that old man was really very lofty, since the quality of this jar was indeed extraordinarily high.

However, he was not the slightest bit interested in using this thing, for the time being, he would just preserve it, and wait for the day when his Cultivation would reach 10 years or more. Then he would summon the soul of Zhao Yibei.

As for the souls of others, did that really matter to him?

With a lightning fast speed, together with the skeleton masked man, he advanced towards Cai Shaohong's villa which was situated in the Yanxi Villa District.

"It seems like something is fishy."

The man in the Skeleton masked said in a dignified tone : "You have killed the old man, this news would have been certainly known to Cai Shaohong, moreover, he must be also aware that after finishing things up here, we would immediately head towards Yanxi Villa District. So, we must be extremely careful, otherwise, our plan might fail very terribly."

"Could it be that he will be all prepared?"

Ye Feng slightly frowned: "You first tell me, what is that so-called Hidden Pavilion Master thing?"

“Those are just like us, the ordinary people, however after taking the new drugs for almost one year, the cell mutation has occurred in their bodies, and as a result, they transformed into this kind of senseless thing.”

The skeleton masked male explained : “At this time, so long as they are injected with some gene medicine in their bodies for cell mutation, they would eventually turn into that shape, and simultaneously, their strength also increases greatly, and their bodies turn as hard as iron.”

Ye Feng listened to him and thought that under the layer of their skin, there was really a very strange layer of steel, was that the result of cell mutation?

It seemed that indeed Pei Keang Group’s technological and scientific level was impressively high. And if it would act unreasonably in this country China, then definitely it would bring a catastrophic situation all over this country. Not only that, but it could also result in immeasurable losses. Surprisingly, Lin Clan didn’t notice this plan all along.

“Finally arrived.”

The skeleton masked man said that gently, as they had finally arrived outside the Yanxi Villa District within half an hour. In order to completely conceal their actions, without leaving behind a single trace, these two people couldn’t afford to hire a taxi. Therefore, they came all the way by running on their feet, so as to procrastinate the point of time.

Quietly they entered, and hid behind the rockery, separated by an artificial river and then poured their visions at Cai Shaohong’s villa. They took a broad view of the area as far as they could see, and noticed that there was nothing threatening and suspicious around it, however, they didn’t dare to be negligent.

“There is an ambush around the villa.”

Ye Feng observed carefully and quickly said that. As he noticed that around the villa, there were shadows of many people hidden in the bushes, dressed in camouflage clothing, and holding a very dignified facial expression.

“Let’s split up.”

The man in the skeleton masked looked at the brightly illuminated lights in the villa, and made a prompt decision : “These are certainly the people of National Security Agency, who must be sent here by Lin Clan. I am going first to distract these people, meanwhile, you enter the villa, and try to quickly look for the opportunities to kill Cai Shaohong, once and for all!”

Ye Feng squinted his eyes and nodded.

Was it really Lin Clan who had sent these people of National Security Agency to protect Cai Shaohong? Indeed they were raising the tiger to bring disaster!

## Chapter 114 - Cai Shaohong's Trump Card

---

While standing in-situ, Ye Feng saw that the skeleton masked man jumped, and quietly ran towards another direction. Then a moment later, he raised his hand holding a gun, and fired his last bullet into the open sky.

Bang!

The sound of the gunshot wasn't very loud, but since it was such a quiet night, so it resounded in all the directions, simultaneously making the camouflage clothing soldiers, waiting in ambush around the villa, notice all of a sudden.

Ye Feng carefully observed that really these camouflage clothing soldiers were the members of the National Security Agency, and their mission objective was to protect the national security. Their psychological quality was naturally so high that not any average person could be compared of.

When the sound of the gunshot rang not very far away, still no movement or activity started around the villa. However, in Ye Feng's line of sight, he saw that several soldiers in camouflage uniforms quickly rushed towards the place from where the sound of the gunshot originated.

If Ye Feng and the masked man hadn't done a careful observation earlier, then it would have been impossible for them to discover these extraordinary camouflage clothing soldiers.

In that split second of the gunshot, Ye Feng, without any hesitation, quickly sprang up high, and jumped out the rockery. Immediately, he cast out Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace together with Camouflage technique simultaneously. Not only his speed was incredibly fast, but with the help of his Camouflage Technique, his appearance had also

become translucent, and had almost attained the stealth effect!

To use the true magic of making oneself invisible efficiently, at least ten years of Cultivation was considered the best. That way one could cover the ambient light of one's body completely, to the extent where no one could see him, not even any camera, surveillance camera, or any other electronic devices could detect him.

However, the current situation of Ye Feng was, he was only able to make him translucent, and there was a risk that he could easily be caught by any electronic device. Moreover, even a cautious observation with the naked eyes could be able to see him in this condition.

But, in this chaos, the mind of camouflage clothing soldiers was already pulled towards the source of the sound of gunfire right now. Hence, very smartly, Ye Feng seized the opportunity, and broke through the blockade line of opposite party at once, without getting discovered by anybody!

After setting his foot in the villa, he quickly assigned away Zhenqi from his body so as to display Camouflage Technique, and to conceal his stature, while maintaining this translucent form continuously.

The villa was brightly lit, but there was no trace of Cai Shaohong anywhere. Ye Feng directly stormed towards the basement entrance, and again felt a really strong divine and spiritual aura spreading outside.

Since there was no one around, so without any hesitation, Ye Feng ran along the staircase and arrived in front of the basement's door. Promptly an orangish-red long Zhenqi sword flashed out in his hand, and in the next moment, he waved his sword twice and cut open a big hole directly in the wooden doors of the basement.

Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace!

Ye Feng didn't hesitate and cast it out once again, and then quickly rolled in the basement.

Shua!

Indeed, a gust of strong wind, roaring approached in front of Ye Feng's face, and had almost crushed his head into fleshy pulp. But Ye Feng was

very cautious, instantly he sensed the danger approaching towards him, and he easily dodged the opposite party's attack. When his footsteps stopped, he raised his head and looked around the dusky basement.

“You really arrived.”

A faint voice resounded.

Wearing a western-style suit, Cai Shahong appeared in front of Ye Feng. At that moment, he was standing almost in the basement terminus and there was a hint of sardonic expression all over his face, while he looked at Ye Feng, who just now had intruded into his basement.

At the side of Cai Shaohong, the kidnapped girl, Xiao Qi was also there, properly tied up, with her mouth tightly covered. There was a look of anger visible on her face as she was struggling to make herself free, while a pair of her clever eyes were tightly staring at Cai Shaohong.

But apart from these two people, there were also several other figures present in the basement, dressed in a huge windproof heavy coat. By looking at them it became clear that they were really the same strange fellows whom Ye Feng had encountered before. This kind of strange thing whose gene had been transformed by injecting them new drugs. They were waiting for Ye Feng in ambush just at the door.

“So that's how it is.”

Seeing Xiao Qi here in this situation, Ye Feng immediately understood the previous situation. It seemed like they had intentionally delayed some time on the road, this really gave a fair chance to Cai Shaohong to make some prior arrangements.

Moreover, it also appeared that when he, along with the other masked man, was busy fighting with the necromancer old man, during that period, very cleverly, Cai Shaohong happened to assign people to go to Xiao Qi's residence, and bring her to him.

The soldiers of National Security Agency, who were assigned outside the villa, also acted as a very good explanation, certainly Cai Shaohong had falsely accused the masked man and would have proven him as a

culprit before Lin Clan. In other words, at present, Ye Feng was not only just facing Cai Shaohong, but also the huge strength of the entire Lin Clan!

But, just for the sake of Cai Shaohong, didn't Lin Clan muster a large force for his protection?

So far, Ye Feng didn't know this thing that Lin Xiuwen had lost his senses somehow, or else he wouldn't have been surprised. But he also didn't know that it was entirely normal, after all, wasn't that fellow was beaten up by Ye Feng, which had made him lose his mind and turn into a retard .....

“You must suffer to death.”

Without the slightest pause, Ye Feng quickly moved and ran towards Cai Shaohong!

Shua!

At the same time, the figure of those strange fellows also flashed. They not only just blocked the path of Ye Feng, but his strike as well, making his sword strike similar to striking at the wall. As a result, after that forceful strike, Ye Feng bounced a few steps back.

This strange and eccentric things' eruption speed was surprisingly way faster than Ye Feng!

“Do you think I, Cai Shaohong is a stupid person, because he is constantly sending cannon fodder to die?”

Cai Shaohong crossed his hands behind his back while standing calmly, suddenly his corners of the mouth curled upwards : “Previously, those guys were just to make you a bit careless. Now, here I have five guys, who are the elites, and have been created by the second generation drugs. If they are compared with the previous one, then it is like, one is equivalent to 10 of the previous one! ”

These five elites were the trump cards of Cai Shaohong!

Therefore, he neither escaped nor was afraid of Ye Feng, he just waited



for the right time when Ye Feng would himself walk into his trap. As for asking the help with Lin Clan, it was just guarding against any contingency, Cai Shaohong couldn't fight this battle, since he couldn't hold any weapon.

In case Ye Feng really turned out extremely powerful, then at the right time, he could at least notify the people of National Security Agency to come and protect him.

Cai Shaohong glanced around and shot his vision at nearby standing Xiao Qi.

The moment he had caught her, since then he had no intention to put her back alive. Just prior to disposing her of, he thought that such beauty shouldn't be wasted like this. These five elites were very fierce type, and he believed that this beauty could become a good toy for them, and would let them enjoy very much .....

Cai Shaohong was very much interested to know that how long this beauty could last under the devastation of these five second-generation elite fighters?

Ye Feng held his sword firmly, as he noticed that these five so-called second generation elites had already encircled him firmly.

These five eccentric elites, they were over two meters tall, and were looking very dominant and powerful. Whether it was their speed, strength or reaction timing, all were several times higher than those previously met strange fellows. Let alone to cut down their neck, five sword strike was needed, he was afraid that even fifty swords hit would also be completely unable to finish them up!

“My strongest attack technique is Ancient Dragon Sword qi, and I believe that one sword would be enough to break through these strange fellows.”

Ye Feng's mind was running at its ultimate speed : “But, Ancient Dragon Sword qi really consumes too much Zhenqi, and its a fact that I only have one chance to use that technique!”

He raised his head and looked at Cai Shaohong, who was standing ten meters away from him.

Cai Shaohong also leisurely, quite confidently, was looking at him, his elegant looking face was suddenly filled with a ridiculing expression : “I’d really like to see that what kind of a face is there beneath this mask. You have killed my several subordinates, today I’ll put an end to this story.”

“All right, I surrender.”

Ye Feng said that and then instantly congealed his Zhenqi condensed sword, and raised his hands.

His action made Cai Shaohong gawked slightly.

What, surrender?

These five elites, who were just about to begin, their stature also stopped at once.

However, at this moment, Ye Feng quickly grasped his sword with his one hand, and in an instant, a long sword condensed out, immediately followed by an icy-blue ray of light, which emerged from the surface of this sword. Soon, this icy-blue ray of light turned into an ice blue Sword qi, and it rushed towards one of these five elites, and in a split second, it penetrated through his head, making him disappear in just one fell swoop.

But, this Sword qi’s castration didn’t reduce here, it quickly advanced towards ten meters away standing Cai Shaohong, with an intention to also get rid of him, then and there!

It was rightly said, all is fair in war. Even if Ye Feng was a very formidable Immortal, still he resorted to extreme measures in a battle with this devil’s big shot. Ye Feng said nothing just feigned his surrender, and distracted the attention of the opposite party, even if it was just for an instant, it was still enough for him to use various means!

## Chapter 115 - A Rare Heavenly Stone Bead

---

The might of this icy-blue Dragon Sword qi was extraordinary.

It was said that originally the penetrating might of the red Zhenqi sword was almost equal to the ordinary bullet, and the destructive power of the orangish-red Zhenqi sword's was double of the previous one. However, if the might of the icy-blue Dragon Sword qi was compared with these two, then it could be said that its power was ten times higher than those two!

One must know, using this technique meant condensing out whole body's Zhenqi, by channelizing it into one move.

Considering the present level of Ye Feng's Cultivation, it could be believed that after displaying Sword qi, his entire body's Zhenqi would have been dried up by now, and it would have become very difficult for him to cast any other Immortal Technique at this moment. Furthermore, even maintaining his Zhenqi Sword of Ancient Dragon Sword Ring, or displaying Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace would be like close to impossible for him at this moment.

His swift and fierce sword penetrated the head of one of those five elites in just one fell swoop, and blew it off into a dozen of pieces. Then his qi, while cutting through the vast sky, instantly appeared in front of Cai Shaohong!

Suddenly facing the Sword qi, which had approached towards him in an instant, Cai Shaohong's pupil immediately contracted.

He had never thought that Ye Feng would be actually able to release his inner qi out of his body like this, which would take the form a strange technique, Sword qi!

Cai Shaohong was just an ordinary human being, obviously, he was too late to make any response. However, in this split second, right before his

death, a series of complex expression flashed on his face.

He recalled the time when he used to live in the U.S., his father was the chairman of Pei Keang Group. Wherever he used to go, he was always respected by the surrounding people. Furthermore, he had been considered as a great human being in the eyes of several ordinary people, for instance – some big shots of the certain military work group, always used to invite him to have dinner together with them, and he was in a very good relationship with all of them.

When he arrived in this country China, by virtue of his excellent education background and his inherent charm and affinity, again he equally, very quickly, obtained a great number of achievements, and also succeeded in attracting the focus of a large number of people towards him.

Once he shared his secret ulterior motive with his father. By harbouring countless lofty ambitions, he came to this country China, and by staying on the safe, he kept fighting steadily for whole one year. Soon, his harvesting time had eventually arrived.

But right at this time, he was in the middle of killing Ye Feng, the masked man!

However, Ye Feng surprisingly had a relationship with Lin Clan, and the rumour of his engagement with Lin Shiqing, both of this news terribly affected and delayed his plan to some extent. But when the masked man killed Song Hu, Dubang Long, and his several meticulously nurtured Hidden Pavilion master, on whom he had invested almost one one year, and had made them his first generation fighters, then he was ticked off, and this made him speed up his strategy, and spend a lot of energy to process things hurriedly.

Because of this kind of thing, he was forced to clear somebody else mess, because as the matter stood, he was engaged in something which was more shameful than the masked man .....

Cai Shaohong knew that in China, there were many state-owned outstandingly people who used to practice martial arts, even he had some

people of that kind at his side. But he really never expected that a trivial young man wearing a mask, could go so far like assigning away his inner qi from his body.

Puff!

Sword qi pierced through his heart.

And suddenly fresh blood gushed out of his heart, and with a “thump” sound, he tumbled onto the ground.

“Ahh!”

While on the other side, the moment Xiao Qi’s eyes fell on the fresh blood splatter, she couldn’t help but screech, then after her head tumbled at a crooked angle, and she passed out, directly.

Seeing the flowing blood, this girl actually felt sick and fainted.

Ye Feng had no time to pay attention to her, since he was also engaged in keeping his eyes on the other side, where the remaining four strange elites were, but soon he found that these four strange fellows had no movement at all, as if they had lost the control, and had become completely motionless.

What might have happened?

Ye Feng walked towards Cai Shaohong who was lying on the ground, and found that there was a remote control in the place when his chest was. But, because of the attack of his Sword qi, that remote just happened to be crushed together with Cai Shaohong. It must be the tool which was used to control these strange things.

However, Ye Feng was totally disinclined to take notice of this high technological tool of Pei Keang Group, in addition, he was also incapable of deciphering it on his own.

Exactly at this moment, Ye Feng suddenly felt a little movement in the Black Jar of Souls which he had placed in his bosom. Therefore, promptly he took it out, and saw a burst of blue smoke drifted out from the body of Cai Shaohong, and was absorbed by this Black Jar all of a sudden.

“Can this stuff also suck in the soul automatically?”

Ye Feng thought that and was somewhat flabbergasted. However, he wouldn't use this Black Jar of Souls to summon a corpse and make it fight. Apparently bringing this thing was almost useless for him.

When the Black Jar of Souls absorbed the soul of Cai Shaohong, afterwards it didn't show any reaction at all.

“Although Cai Shaohong's soul doesn't hold too much importance and usable value to me, but still I am waiting for my Cultivation to hit ten years, then I'll summon him, and will interrogate him to drag out something important .....

Ye Feng thought that and then put away the Black Jar of Souls.

Then he glanced at Xiao Qi, whose both hands were dangled and her mouth was also covered. He quickly waved his sword, and cut off the rope by which her hands were tied, simultaneously making her petite stature gradually, very softly fall down.

“I rescued this girl twice, but the fact is, it was purely coincidental.”

Ye Feng thought this and left her there as it is.

At present, he was worried about only one thing and that was the divine spiritual energy which was leaking out from the another secret room in the basement, which probably let him promote his Cultivation up to five years!

He still had little Zhenqi left in his body, so by slightly pushing it out into a form of Zhenqi condensed sword, he quickly walked to the wall, and without thinking much, directly sliced the wall, making a passageway that could make a human enter inside it.

Suddenly, he felt a strong presence of richer divine and spiritual influence quite close to him!

“What is this thing after all?”

Ye Feng was really taken aback by this strong presence, hence, without further delay, he quickly entered the secret room.

The entrance of this secret room was originally a hidden password space, but since Ye Feng could feel a strong presence of the divine spiritual aura. So, no matter how it was concealed, it couldn't escape his sensation ever. Perhaps a martial artist might not sense it, but for an Immortal Cultivator, the divine spiritual influence was like fireflies in the dark night, which they couldn't ignore.

This private room was probably around one hundred square feet, the surrounding walls of this room were painted with white colour, and the room was quite spacious. There were several fine iron password-locked boxes kept in the corners of this room, and there was no clue that, what would have been there inside these locked boxes.

But suddenly Ye Feng's heart felt something and he remained startled. Actually he could feel the presence of spiritual energy emanating from one of these password-locked boxes!

He ran few steps towards a box, suddenly brandished his sword and sliced open the lid of a password-protected fine iron box, while maintaining utmost vigilance.

After cutting open the lid of that iron box, no sudden accident took place, which made him feel a little relieved.

He moved close to it and took a look inside, all of a sudden something pulled his attention. That was a fist-sized irregular stone, and there were anomalous patterns on its surface. Moreover, its entire body was presenting a translucent green, and was exuding inexhaustible spiritual energy.

A rare heavenly stone bead!

His mood was immediately piqued!

In the World of the Immortals, there were not much heavenly material treasures present, which could be used to enhance one's Cultivation. And the several treasures, which were easily found there, were effective only during its first use. This heavenly stone bead was the apex kind of treasure among them!

There was a case in the World of the Immortals, Nanling's Mo Clan could never obtain even a single heavenly treasure ever. If this kind of rare heavenly stone bead would appear there, and this news would spread out, then definitely it would raise a tsunami of a large group of hundreds of years of Cultivation possessing old monster, who would try to make a move and snatch it away.

The key reason was because this kind of rare heavenly stone bead could let a cultivation practitioner enhance one's cultivation by five years, at one fell swoop.

Five years, even is an Immortal Cultivator possesses just five years of an intermediate level of Cultivation, but still, it isn't a small figure. The lifespan of a human being is limited, if it could raise a person's cultivation instantly up to five years, couldn't it make people jealous?

"Now, it seems like I really can achieve ten years of Cultivation in a single blow!"

From the bottom of his heart, Ye Feng felt a pleasant surprise, it seemed like his luck was very favourable nowadays.

Although he didn't have any idea how Cai Shaohong obtained this kind of precious thing, but a rare heavenly stone bead appeared in front of Ye Feng was an indisputable fact.

If he was really interested to know the background, then the only thing he could do right now was absorbing the spiritual energy from this stone bead. Afterwards, he could easily cast out Gathering Soul Technique, and would drag the soul of Cai Shaohong out from the Black Jar of Souls, and then he would inquire as much as he wanted in detail.

He repressed his overflowing excitement in his heart for the time being, as he knew that this was not the right time to relax.

But exactly at this moment, he heard a series of dishevelled footsteps' sound from behind.

"Xiao Qi!"

A crisp and intense sound of Lin Shiqing passed from outside, followed



by a sound of tidy and emollient steps of a group of people, and soon they blocked the entrance of that private room, making Ye Feng trapped inside.

Ping!

A clear sound of an ear-piercing gunshot rang.

Since the entire Zhenqi of Ye Feng's body had already depleted completely, therefore he failed to dodge the bullet, and suddenly felt a severe pain in his right thigh. Immediately fresh blood splashed out, since he was hit by a shot, which had unexpectedly made a big hole in his right thigh. At the same time, this shot had also affected the meridian of his right leg, somehow his meridians had started to receive a strange force, which was making his meridians erode gradually.

What a gun, could it be actually this much powerful?

Ye Feng knelt down on his one knee, and immediately turned around!

## Chapter 116 - Ten Years Cultivation

---

Ye Feng knelt down on the floor by leaning against his one knee and looked around coldly.

He coldly looked at the narrow and small doorway in that secret room, which he had created just a few minutes back. At that entrance two heavily armed soldiers, wearing camouflage uniforms, each carrying a strange shape of firearms, wearing hard helmets and electronic eye-shades, were standing cautiously. Moreover, there was a pattern of five-star on their camouflage clothes, right on their chest, which was representing their loyalty towards the country.

Just a second ago, that bullet, which pierced through his right leg, was shot by one of them.

But right behind those two soldiers, a middle-aged man, with a shallow black beard and holding a very dignified look, was standing and looking at Ye Feng constantly. Even though Ye Feng was that kind of a person who was 100 % ignorant towards politics, but still he could easily recognize who this man was!

On the television, he was often seen at various national conferences, even more, the news broadcasts used to also frequently show his form. He was the father of Lin Shiqing, the most important member of Lin Clan, and one of the most powerful person in the entire country China, who was called by the name Lin Detian!

But actually, he showed up here out of the blue, was it because he wanted to personally deal with the masked man?

Ye Feng felt a little funny seeing him there, soon the crisp voice of Lin Shiqing spread in that secret room, and it seemed like since she was unable to awake Xiao Qi, so she was taking her out, so as to send her to the hospital.

Right after seeing Cai Shaohong's blood, Xiao Qi fainted, so why was she taking this long to wake up from her dizziness?

Ye Feng suddenly felt that his luck was really so unfavourable, because if this girl, Xiao Qi would have woken up now, then she would have explained everything very clearly, and his case would have been easily solved .....

Of course, what happened if his luck was not standing by his side at the moment, there was still a heavenly stone bead in his hand, so as long he strived for few minutes, he could still find out many ways to break through this tight encirclement.

“You have been surrounded, surrender now.”

Lin Detian said that lightly to raise his hands and surrender, it seemed that his decision was completely based on one thing, as long as Ye Feng would revolt, he would directly order to fire a shot again.

At present, Ye Feng was enduring a severe pain in his right leg, actually, that gunshot had not only blown his entire right leg, but had also made half a fist-sized hole in it, from where his blood was constantly splattering. But still it was nothing, what more frightening was because of that bullet, the meridians of his entire right leg had started corroding bit by bit, and was gradually losing his strength.

“National Security Agency, indeed they have some specialized weapons to deal with the people of martial arts world, no wonder there was quite a few martial artists who would dare to act recklessly .....

Ye Feng tightly clenched his teeth, raised his masked face, and swept his glance at Lin Detian as well as those two soldiers, who were standing at the door.

Shua!

His stature flashed, and instantly by using his one leg, he sprang up and directly charged into the narrow entrance of the secret room, by holding an almost gradually dissipating Zhenqi sword in his hand, he finally entered the room, simultaneously waved his sword.

“Fire!”

Seeing the sudden action of Ye Feng, Lin Detian’s eyelids suddenly tightened and without any hesitation, he ordered at once.

Ping! Ping!

The sound of the gunshots was crisp and ear-piercing, but it was closely followed by a comparative louder bellow. Actually after several sword strikes made by Ye Feng, the entrance door of the secret room had finally collapsed, and as a result, several huge stones rolled down and firmly blocked the narrow entrance of the secret room!

As a consequent, it led to even wider scope collapse. Since the secret room was in the basement of that villa, so when its door completely collapsed, it caused an empty place below the villa, which later lead to a huge destruction.

The quality of the villas of Yanxi Villa District wasn’t indeed worth mentioning.

But tonight, half side of the villa actually caved in, leaving behind an intense deafening sound!

However in this chaos, very intelligently Ye Feng switched off the lights of that secret room, leaving only a culminated stone bead in his hand, which was emitting a green ray of light, and was simultaneously adding a mysterious aura to the entire room.

But at the entrance of that secret room, two soldiers of NSA along with Lin Detian were blocked outside. What would have been going on outside currently, Ye Feng neither knew that, nor he had time to pay attention towards it.

At this point of time, for him, the matter of vital importance was, he must absorb this spiritual energy of this rare stone bead, as fast as possible!

When the entire room was still under the effect of fierce shaking, at that time, on the other side, Ye Feng, while enduring a terrible pain on his right leg, and holding that heavenly stone bead, started revolving his

Dantian, simultaneously making his Dantian to start absorbing the spiritual energy of that stone bead.

The value of this precious stone bead was more than hundred times higher than any other Lingshi. In other words, if someone would want to sell this piece of stone in the martial arts world, then naturally he would at least charge 100 million for this, which was extremely high. Of course, even if it would pay Ye Feng 100 million, still it was impossible for him to sell this rare and precious stone bead.

However, the true wealth is not in the money, since money could never enhance his Cultivation. The most important thing was the supreme power, which was not only considered as an extremely precious thing in the World of the Immortals, but was also considered important in the modern city. And above all, Ye Feng also used to believe this point.

When life and death were totally controlled by powerful people, then at that time, was there any use of having a huge amount of money?

Of course, the real strength didn't only lie in having the highest level of Cultivation, but it also based on something else, such as holding a great influence and so on in this modern city. Then after one could display one's personal connection, family background, and other ability to show his dominance.

Ye Feng clenched the rare stone bead tightly, and pacified the revolution of his Dantian at its utmost speed, at the same time, a wisp of spiritual energy flew out of that bead, like a boundless sea wave, and made its way directly into his Dantian. Immediately his Dantian transformed that energy into Zhenqi.

Fortunately, while searching Su Feiying in the Changbai Mountain, Ye Feng had almost used half of the time in broadening his meridians, to the extent where we could easily accommodate a decade of cultivation now. After absorbing all the spiritual energy of this stone bead, even if he got a lot of other Lingshi currently, he wouldn't be able to immediately lift his Cultivation.

Gradually, he broadened his meridians, so as to forcefully made them

capable of holding and absorbing a huge amount of spiritual energy, which would simultaneously help him in enhancing his Cultivation.

Six years!

Seven years!

Eight years!

Each time he took several minutes, to increase his Cultivation by one year. However, in this last ten minutes of time, the NSA troops, who were standing outside the room, had already thought of a way, and brought some explosives.

Soon, a huge sound of the explosion echoed everywhere, and blew off the entrance of that secret room entirely!

Because of this huge blast and its jolting effect, Ye Feng, who was on the ground, in a squat form, was lifted up and thrown him towards the wall, and he bumped heavily against the walls. As a result of this blast, several password-protected iron boxes were buried inside by a huge pile of crushed stones and building materials, leaving behind a mystery that what was locked inside them.

However, Ye Feng didn't get distracted by this, because due to the absorption of the spiritual energy, his senses had become very sharp, to the extent where he had now easily sensed that in these 56 boxes, there was only one box which had something useful, and that was this precious stone bead, while the rest of them didn't worth to risk his life as well as time.

Nine years!

Right at this time, one after another, dressed in camouflage clothing uniform, National Security Agency's soldiers, holding the precision firearms, dashed into that dark and dust-laden secret room. They had several big flashlights on at this moment, in this dim-lighted room.

Fortunately, by this time, because of so much absorption, the green light of that stone bead had gradually become dim. In addition, this secret room was already filled with dust and debris, hence surprisingly,

Ye Feng wasn't discovered by the opposite party.

At this point of time, Ye Feng was hidden against a megalith, and his Dantian was crazily revolving and sucking the divine energy continuously, quite speedily.

The meridians of his whole body had also started swelling up and suffusing Zhenqi, continuously giving him a feeling of rising strength throughout his body. Not only that, originally, he had exhausted his Zhenqi completely, which was also fully restored, and the wound on his right leg, also stopped bleeding.

"You have already been surrounded, come out at once and surrender! No matter how much years of Cultivation you have, possibly you can never be a match for NSA's elite men!"

A rough voice suddenly reverberated throughout the room, apparently, it was not Lin Detian, it seemed like this was the voice of a team leader of the National Security Agency. For them, at present, this room was extremely dangerous. Hence, naturally, it was impossible for Lin Detian to risk the lives of several innocent people.

Merely a single sword could trigger the collapse of the entire villa, this kind of super power was rarely seen in the entire martial arts world!

"Is it?"

Finally, at this time, Ye Feng's corners of the mouth gradually moved upwards, as he smiled secretly.

Ten years Cultivation!

The level of Cultivation he had before his rebirth on the Earth, he finally attained that again. As a result, he felt like his whole body had become very handy and flexible, as if he was a fish in the water. At this moment, he felt that again he was in the World of the Immortals, and again he was following Su Feiying, while facing enemies, one after another .....

He shook his head, as he knew that this was not the proper time to think about this thing.

He had finally attained ten years Cultivation, now he could cast several other Immortal Techniques quite easily, like Red Inflammation, Invisibility, Gathering Soul Technique, Holy Cure Technique, and so on. Moreover, he could also display Soul Search Technique, by which he could sense any kind of sound or activity which would take place in his surroundings.

Presently, Ye Feng didn't have much time to cast out Soul Search Technique, however, he was able to display Invisibility!

Quietly, the stone bead finally lost its lustre completely, so Ye Feng dropped it on the ground, and in this dark room, his stature gradually disappeared .....



## Chapter 117 - A Quiet Departure

---

The bright light of flashlights gradually illuminated the entire underground secret room of the villa, there was dust all over the place, and the place was completely piled up with several crushed stones.

Although, ten soldiers of NSA searched everywhere over and over, but didn't find anyone, not even a shadow.

“Didn't you make sure that nobody could escape from here during this period?”

The facial expression of Lin Detian wasn't appearing quite good, he wanted to hear the activity report of the basement's entrance, hence he inquired that directly from the Captain.

*(Lastvoice : I'll use Captain in place of team leader from now onwards.)*

“No, when we exploded open the entrance of this room, at that time, our three men were standing just outside the entrance, blocking the way, so it is impossible for anyone to escape.”

The Captain said that in a sinking voice, it seemed like he was a 35-36-year-old man, from head to toe, he was emitting the aura of being a very vigorous person with resolute temperament. And because of his this trait, he was popular with this name 'Thunder'. He was the primary assistant of Lin Detian and had handled countless, excessively intractable and tricky affairs.

But today this matter had really completely puzzled his mind, a masked man, trapped in a perfectly favourable condition, how could he still so disappear?

Thunder was somewhat a dark skinned man, after reporting to Lin Detian, he again proceeded with his thorough and cautious inspection of the outside area of the semi-collapsed basement.

Very quickly, he searched through the corpse of Cai Shaohong which was still lying on the ground, and found a wrecked sophisticated remote control, which had a very complexed structure. However, various kinds of its sophisticated components had already been slivered and smashed by some kind of sharp weapon.

“These five strange people, could it be that these fellows have also been brought by that masked man?”

Thunder, while looking towards those five strange fellows, who had already been properly placed against the wall, tightly wrinkled his brows and thought for a while. By looking at the broken fragments of that sophisticated remote control, he gradually began to feel that things were not as simple as he thought it should be. Then he pondered for a while, and suddenly felt that the objective of this action was likely to be miscalculated by them.

While being completely indulged in his thought process, he shifted his gaze towards Lin Detian, who was still standing at the basement's entrance at the moment, and thought that if at present, he would talk about this to his Chief, then most probably, the other party would turn a deaf ear.

“Report the Captain, still, we couldn't find anyone!”

Soon, a team member quickly ran out of the secret room, and with overflowing enthusiasm, reported : “But we have found several fine iron password-locked boxes, and with our full strength we have dug them out from a heap of rocks and stones.”

“Got it.”

Thunder waved his hand, signalling the other party to continue, then he walked towards Lin Detian, and by lowering his voice, said: “Chief, we must ask Miss Xiao Qi about this matter, because what exactly had happened here, only she is the one who knows everything clearly .....

“That girl, every time she sees blood, she becomes unconscious for several hours.”

There was still a very ugly looking expression stuck on Lin Detian's face.

Right now, he was thinking about Lin Xiuwen, who was in the hospital now, and it had already been ascertained that because of some unknown causes, his intelligence had terribly deteriorated. In fact, his IQ dropped to the level of two-year-old baby, furthermore, the likelihood of his recovery was very low.

And as for Cai Shaohong, who was not only the most respected and famous boy of Yanjing University, but was also the beloved son of Pei Keang Group's Chairman. However, at this crucial time, his body had already turned icy-cold and he was lying all dead on the floor of this room.

And most importantly, all these were the deeds of that masked man. In this circumstances, he could never let off that masked man.

"Some people come over here, and follow me."

Since he had previously investigated, so he knew that Ye Feng and that masked man were somehow related. But the point was, he neither dug in further nor paid attention to this matter, because this thing wasn't obstructing him in any way. But now, the masked man had actually started targeting Lin people, could he really endure this thing anymore now?

There was still a few hours left till Xiao Qi regain her senses, and he was an impatient kind of person, it was impossible for him to wait by then.

At this moment, he just wanted to quickly rush to Qingfeng park to look for Ye Feng, and then he would directly interrogate and torture him, to draw out something crucial, like who this masked man was and other related information.

"You guys, follow the Chief."

Thunder waved his hands towards few soldiers, and immediately six soldiers moved forwards and marched to go along with Lin Detian.

Afterwards, Thunder himself, with the rest of his men, started processing on the scene: “These password-locked boxes, take them out, collect all the broken pieces of this sophisticated remote control, there are also some other strange fellows and they are also the same kind. Inform the forensic team for autopsy, Cai Shaohong’s status is appearing somewhat dubious .....

Regarding the death of Cai Shaohong, if this case wasn’t handled properly, then it might lead to an international dispute!

This made Thunder be utmost careful while dealing with his case.

Thunder and his remaining eight soldiers, they all were considered as the veterans in handling this kind of affair. Instantly, all of them started processings things in the basement, as directed by their Captain.

And Ye Feng, who was still hiding in this secret room all along, until now, finally he left this place quietly.

Just a few minutes ago, when the three soldiers of NSA firmly blocked this room and exploded its entrance, even though Ye Feng was in invisible form, but still he didn’t disturb anyone to escape from here. But now, since the opposite party was occupied in their own investigation, so he finally found the opportunity to escape.

Ye Feng could such quickly reach ten years Cultivation, it was indeed a coincidence. But if he hadn’t broadened his meridians, by his extreme measures and severe effort, then, even though he had this precious stone bead, but still he couldn’t use it, all he could do was staring at the stone bead miserably.

It was all about his luck accompanied by his commendable effort. But the crucial point was, from now onwards, it wouldn’t have been so easy for him to upgrade his Cultivation.

At present, for Ye Feng, the top priority was to find an appropriate place to hide, and then as soon as possible, he must bring into action his Soul Search Technique. With the help of this technique, he could easily sense anything within a radius of 360 degrees, kind of a full range radar, and when in this hundred meters scope, even the slightest sign of trouble

would crop up, it couldn't escape his sensation.

Even if someone would make himself invisible using this technique Invisibility, just like him, but still Ye Feng could easily sense his presence, by relying on this technique, Soul Search!

As a consequence, regardless of any kind of situation, its safety coefficient would become extremely high. For instance, like the previous time, when Zhao Yibei was shot dead by the sniper, such kind of incident could never happen again. Suddenly, the thought of this bright and lively boy, turned Ye Feng a bit worried, since he didn't know that his technique of summoning the soul of the deceased, could really work here or not, he could succeed in summoning his soul out from the Black Jar of Souls or not.

However, even if he turned out successful in summoning him, he was still incapable of making his resurrection exactly the same, as he was before.

If this place was the World of the Immortals, then it would have been absolutely suitable to use this Immortal Technique .....

In the darkness of the night, Ye Feng carefully looked around, but he didn't find that other masked man. Also, he didn't know that what the identity of that man was, he lurked around Cai Shaohong for whole one year, but didn't reveal his cloven hoof. So for now, Ye Feng should bear it patiently. But if in future, he would be able to use that masked man again, then he wouldn't hesitate, since he knew how talented that man was.

Ye Feng shook his head, and decided not to think much, if they were predestined friends, then, eventually they could see each other again someday.

He immediately cast out Invisibility, and quietly left the Yanxi Villa District, until he went several kilometres away from this area. Then after, he deactivated Invisibility, suddenly making his personal stature become visible again.

Taking his present level of Cultivation, he had been able to maintain

Invisibility perfectly, but couldn't surpass even half an hour. Although he was loaded with the abundant amount of Zhenqi, after it was fully restored in his body, but he must save his Zhenqi, so as to use it at the essential time, moreover, his recovery was also too slow.

The blood hole on his right leg, was clearly visible under this moonlight. After a while, he had to display Heavenly Cure Technique, simultaneously had to calculate how much could be restored. Also when he was in Changbai Mountains, he had received several scars which were left by Heavenly Sword Palace's Li Hua, this time, he could also erase them all.

Ten years Cultivation, it was really too big to bring about a variety of changes in the texture of his Cultivation!

.....

But at this moment, on the other side, in that semi-collapsed villa, along with his eight soldiers, Thunder was still intensely engaged in searching through the entire place. His field of action was not only limited to the basement area, but had actually expanded to the whole villa, in order to gather any kind of related evidence. Soon, all of his men dispersed all over to search more attentively.

“Who is it?”

On the second floor of the villa, a camouflage clothing soldier suddenly was alarmed. He could see 360-degree view of his surrounding, through his sophisticated electronic eye shades, and at that moment, he saw a dark shadow suddenly flashed.

He acted decisively, by holding a gun he turned around, the blue light was shining on the precision barrel of his gun, by aiming it, he suddenly jumped in the room, all prepared to shoot the target on the spot, but he was too late.

Puff! Puff! Puff!

Suddenly, a flying knife came towards him and hit him in his throat. It was thrown by that dark shadow very exquisitely. Once again, that

shadow, threw few more knives, one after another very forcefully, directly aiming at his throat!

## Chapter 118 - Masked Man's Shadow

---

When a blood-curdling screech passed on from the second floor of the villa, it literally shocked everyone in this dark night. As a result, the Captain, Thunder, who was in the basement at this moment, promptly responded and rushed towards the second floor.

“Be prepared for action!”

He shouted out fiercely, and immediately examined his fighting equipment, at the same time, several other men also rushed upstairs, following him.

This villa of Yanxi Villa District was quite luxurious, which had several large rooms on the second floor. Everyone immediately rushed towards that luxurious room from where that pitiful yelling voice was transmitted. They saw one of their team members was lying on the ground, and the fresh blood was streaming out.

Seeing this scene, suddenly Thunder's heart was taken aback and he quickly ran up to him. While the other men, who were also in a state of shock, carrying their sophisticated weapons, started searching the entire room thoroughly, simultaneously they were extremely alert, since they had a feeling that again a surprise attack might happen at any time.

All the members of the country's National Security Agency used to be a veteran warrior. In addition, they were fully sophisticated armed soldiers, and each of them could easily deal with ten strong men at the same time. Since because of their status, they had always been given several difficult missions, and during these missions, they often used to get injured, but they have never seen deaths.

But actually one of his team members had died here!

By taking big strides, Thunder hurriedly arrived in front of the deceased, examined him a little bit, and immediately drew a conclusion :



The throat of his team member was lacerated by some kind of sharp weapon, and as a consequence, he died!

On body equipment of the NSA members' were also used to be chosen perfectly. All team members used to carry a small-sized real-time video recorder with them always.

Without a bit of hesitation, Thunder quickly opened the collar of his deceased team member. But to his surprise, he saw that the small video recorder, which was supposed to be there on the collar, was actually badly crushed into pieces now.

Fresh blood was constantly dripping out from his throat. Although he could see blood, but there was no trace of the weapon which was used in this murder. However, he could certainly see that a sharp weapon was used to cut his throat.

A sword? A dagger? Or a hidden weapon?

Although Thunder was looking very calm and composed by his face, but his brain was constantly making conjectures, like could the culprit kill his team member instantly, could he affirm that the opposite party was definitely someone from the martial arts world.

From the technique he used to kill his man, it could be said that his Cultivation would be quite high. Moreover, it was also apparent that he was very much familiar with the equipment used by the members of the National Security Agency. At least he knew about the small video camera, therefore he crushed it, so as to erase all evidence.

But currently the issue was, did he arrive here just to kill his team member, who could be the opposite party? What was he up to?

“It’s not good, quickly run downstairs!”

Immediately the facial expression of Thunder changed, and he stood up hastily. The dead had already died, he couldn’t stick to him for so long, because he still had a lot of relevant proofs and information of this case lying in the basement, which he had to protect at any cost.

When a group of people rushed downstairs and arrived at the

basement's door, from quite a very far distance, they felt a heat wave, which was blowing and hitting directly on their faces.

The fire was soaring in the basement, shockingly it was set on fire!

Seeing that, Thunder lost his control and started burning with fury. He shouted loudly, commanding his two soldiers to promptly open their fire-fighting equipment with the maximum speed, which they used to always carry with themselves, and then immediately burst into the basement to extinguish this fire.

Apart from all these things, one must know that one of his team members was still in the basement, who was assigned there to take care of the things!

“Oh, that's right, our vehicle is outside!”

Suddenly Thunder remembered something, and he couldn't control himself and turned too overwrought. They had just processed the scene, but all their evidence, like those five Stange fellows, Cai Shaohong's corpse, and that sophisticated remote control, all were still in the basement, since they didn't get adequate time to shift them somewhere else. But, they had already transferred five fine iron password-locked boxes to a military truck, which was parked outside the villa.

“Half of the people follow me, and the rest of people, you people take care of the things here, extinguish the fire of this basement, simultaneously, be always on your guard against sneak attack, or anything else. In case you notice any kind of suspicious thing, then send me a signal immediately!”

After finished saying that, along with his three members, he quickly rushed outside the villa.

When they arrived near their green-coloured military truck, they saw a dark shadow was carrying few boxes down the truck. But then instantly his stature flashed and he ran towards the nearby artificial woods. Extremely soon, he went very far away from them, his speed was extremely fast!

“Fire!”

Thunder passed the order without any hesitation, by raising his hand in his direction, and instantaneously, all of his three members responded and raised their firearms in hand to shoot.

Ping! Ping! Ping!

After three crisp and ear-piercing sound of gunfire, these three bullets, mixed with blue light of their gun barrel, drew a very beautiful and profound arc light, under the moonlight, as if a poisonous snake pursuing the dark shadow, who had fled into the woods, and its speed was far more than an ordinary bullet!

“Naive.”

A gloomy but a deep voice in a lower tone burst out from the direction where that dark shadow was.

They only saw that the figure of that dark shadow sparked, and tapped his footsteps thrice on the ground, then after, very smoothly, while carrying some password-locked boxes, he went through the woods, and in a blink of an eye, disappeared, leaving behind those three blue-coloured bullets, which at last hit the ground and then immediately disappeared.

The special firearms of NSA were specially designed to cope up either with the people of the martial arts world, or with the ghost or soul kind of supernatural thing. Their penetrating might was enormously high, coupled with a tremendous destructive power. Moreover, they also had a very special kind of meridian erosion feature.

But regardless of the enormous might of these weapons, if they still failed to hit the target, then that would be considered as a complete waste of power.

“SHIT!”

Seeing the opposite party easily escaped, Thunder couldn't bear but cursed loudly. He thought in his heart that the agility of that fellow was very fearful. In his ten years of duty, he had never come across any

martial artist, who was as quick as this fellow was.

But just before the disappearance of that shadow, soldiers had actually seen through their sophisticated electronic eye-shades, that there was a white grimace mask on the face of that shadow.

“Really that fellow was the masked man.”

Thunder became very agitated seeing this, hurriedly he rushed back to the military truck along with his men, where he found that one of his team members, who was also assigned there for keeping an eye on the truck, was already dead and lying on the back seat. His throat was also punctured by a sharp weapon in a similar way like others. In addition, all iron boxes, which they had shifted before, had already vanished without a trace.

Soon, the other team members, who were in the basement, spread the news that the fire was also artificially caused by someone. The entire basement was filled with gasoline and the fire intensity was also very enormous, to the extent that not even the precision equipment of NSA was capable of suppressing the fire quickly.

It was an estimation that all the evidence present in the basement, like five strange fellows, Cai Shaohong’s corpse, sophisticated remote control, and so on, all would have been disappeared by now in this fire. Also, they didn’t get any information about their team members, who was left behind earlier in the basement. Might be, he had also been killed similarly.

A shadow had caused such a big loss to them, not only he had broken the whole trail, but had also slaughtered their three team members!

“So formidable, it’s granted that if the entire people of the martial arts world would line-up, then he must be able to stand at number one place in that line, because of his strength.”

Thunder was known for his incomparable dignity, however, such a big matter happened, and he, as the Captain of the National Security Agency, hadn’t been able to deal with it efficiently. Quickly, he pulled out a small and exquisite communicating device, which was just a thumb-

sized device, and then by pressing a button, he made a call to Lin Detian.

.....

While, at this time, Lin Detian, along with the six members of the National Security Agency, boarded on a green military truck, and directly headed towards Qingfeng Park, and soon arrived outside it.

When the young security guard of the community saw them, he quickly ran out to block their way. But the truck driver flung a document towards him, making him scare away. And as a result, he really didn't dare to say a single word, and silently slipped away back to the security room.

Finally, the military truck pulled into Qingfeng Park, and stopped outside Ye Feng's villa.

“..... What, wearing a mask again?”

Lin Detian got the phone call, while he was getting out of the truck. His complexion had already become even more ugly than before.

All the evidence of Yanxi Villa District had been completely destroyed by the masked man! Moreover, three team members of the National Security Agency had also fallen prey to him and mercilessly killed. One must know that all the members of NSA used to be very carefully chosen, and that also, after the most rigorous training of five years, which cost lots of millions!

That was too much, it really went too far!

Lin Detian was shaking all over with rage, if he still didn't capture that masked man, then how could he show his face to the country?

However, if he really wanted to find out that masked man, then at this present stage, he could only rely on his “good relationship” with Ye Feng.

“Go inside and search!”

As soon as Lin Detian waved his hand, immediately four members of the National Security Agency jumped down the truck, and hurtled to enter the villa.

“What are you doing?”

A pretty figure opened the front door of the villa. She was actually Su Menghan, who was tossing and turning but couldn't fall asleep.

She saw that those four soldiers, carrying heavy and fully loaded rifles, were trying to burst into the villa and carry out their search operation. But suddenly she felt that it was not good, since there were lots of rare martial arts books of Ye Feng's grandfather, hence, she couldn't let them go inside and search!

## Chapter 119 - Su Menghan Is Captured

---

Lin Detian walked upto the door of the villa and firmly stood there, with his hands crossed behind his back, but when he saw that surprisingly Su Menghan appeared in front of him, he was somewhat taken aback.

“Call out Ye Feng to come outside.”

The order he left was completely unquestionable.

“He is not here right now, but why are you looking for him?”

Su Menghan was also standing at the door, blocking it, and a pair of her beautiful eyes were looking at him. Obviously, she had recognized the identity of the opposite party. But she had some doubts, what did Ye Feng do tonight outside, which had caught the attention of such a great personality?

If Su Menghan had seen Lin Detian before, standing at her door like this, then definitely she would have been extremely startled. But now, since she had begun practising Cultivation, therefore, her vision had naturally broadened.

“Not here?”

Lin Detian sneered, and immediately waved his hand : “Take hold of this young lady and ask her to be our guest, meanwhile, I am going to inform Ye Feng to come over.”

After finished speaking, he turned around and walked away.

Of course, it was an unconditional compliance for the members of the National Security Agency, but as soon as they heard his order, immediately they stepped forward and took Su Menghan under their custody directly, so as to take her away.

“What are you doing? Why am I being arrested?”

Su Menghan got angry and also started struggling to free herself, but all of her efforts were completely useless. Facing four members of the National Security Agency wasn't a child play, even if they would appear before Ye Feng, still it would be quite difficult to suppress them. Not to mention she just had started practising Cultivation, she hadn't learnt even a single Immortal Technique so far, basically, she didn't even have the slightest bit of fighting strength presently.

“Sorry, we just obey orders, young lady, don't make things difficult for us, or else we can only knock you down.”

One of the members of the NSA, while looking at her through his electronic eye-shades, said in a sinking voice.

“Where are you taking me?”

Su Menghan snappily asked that.

“For everything, we must listen to our Chief's instructions.”

One of them replied, and then he looked at his other team member, as if they were mutually thinking that it was too troublesome and really annoying.

“Bang” with a sound, he immediately hit on the back of Su Menghan with his hand knife, very precisely, directly aiming at the exact position, making her easily faint.

Shortly after, she was carried to their green coloured military truck, and from there, she was directly escorted to Lin Clan's Villa, which was in the Changping District.

While on the other side, Lin Detian took out his cell phone, and on the basis of his former investigation about Ye Feng, quickly drew out his number and dialled it.

.....

At this point of time, Ye Feng was at the Weiming Lakeside of Yanjing University, and was quietly preparing to launch his exquisite Soul Search Technique, while switching on his cell phone. Actually, this phone was



given to him by Scar, when he had returned from the Changbai Mountains, and Scar had gone to pick him from the village.

The moment he switched it on, immediately it rang up, leaving Ye Feng with some doubts. When he looked at the number, he thought that did he know this number?

Without thinking much, he picked up the call, however, didn't speak first.

"Ye Feng?"

From the other side of the phone, a very dignified voice of a middle-aged man, passed on.

"Lin Detian?"

Ye Feng heard it and instantly recognized whose voice this was, wasn't he heard it before, in the basement, it was the voice of Lin Detian, but, why did he call him?

A random thought suddenly hit his mind, he guessed that since the opposite party certainly couldn't find the masked man, so he was trying to find him.

"Yes, it's me."

Lin Detian seemed condescending, bluntly asked: "Your friend the masked man, where is he now, and what is his identity?"

"Sorry, he's just my friend, not my servant. It's already too late, how would I know where he should be right now?"

Ye Feng also replied that coldly.

"Well, I'm not inquiring you, but ordering you!"

Lin Detian lightly groaned : "He is concerned with our military action, therefore, I am really sorry to say but from now on, your each and every movement will be a part of military action. It doesn't matter where you are right now, must member, within an hour must come to Changping District, and accept the military investigation. In addition, Miss Su Menghan is also coordinating with us, and is already under investigation

now. If you don't come ....."

The thing which baffled Ye Feng was why he didn't take his own initiative to find the whereabouts of Ye Feng, was it because Su Menghan was an easy option? Otherwise, with his jurisdiction, he could have very easily traced him out through the phone signal, but he was too lazy to use this way.

"She didn't know anything, you started your interrogation with her, isn't it strange?"

Ye Feng's complexion immediately changed.

"She lives with you, of course, she must be knowing something. Once again, this is a military operation, you must not do anything irrational to resist."

Lin Detian stressed this with the numerous expressions, afterwards, his tone changed into a scolding : "Even though you are Old man Ye's grandson, but I can still deal with him if it is needed. Do you know that this time, because of that masked man, Pei Keang Group's key training object Cai Shaohong, was killed in our country China? Moreover, he didn't stop here, he not only somehow made Xiuwen lose his intellect, but had also killed three elites of NSA ....." "

Ye Feng heard that and remained stunned for a moment.

Lin Xiuwen became a retard?

Three elites of NSA were killed?

What relationship did these have with him? He had only killed Cai Shaohong, but that guy was planning something dangerous to harm this country China. There were already lots of evidence related to his plan, in the secret room of the basement. So, didn't the National Security Agency investigate it properly?

It was simply like eating plain rice free of cost!

Snapped.

Lin Detian, after finished saying everything, immediately hung up the

phone.

Ye Feng thought that and tossed his cell phone into the Weiming Lake.

Imagine, if he didn't arrive at that Changping District within one an hour, then not only Su Menghan would be embroiled, but also the opposite party would find his location, via cell phone signal, with 100 percent guarantee.

He was looking cold, without a thorough investigation, Lin Detian randomly arrested people at his own will, it was simply baffling, and really annoying. If anything wrong would have to Su Menghan, then he would certainly turn the entire Lin Clan upside down!

He just had one hour of time, but it was still enough for him to condense out Soul Search Technique. He must rush to Lin Clan as soon as possible, but if he didn't go over there completely prepared, then he couldn't be able, to make other things clear to them, and convince them to restart their investigation in a new light.

Lin Xiuwen turned into a retard, three soldiers of NSA were killed, it seemed like that particular person definitely knew that all these things would stir up problems for Ye Feng.

Was someone deliberately trying to frame him into this mess?

Ye Feng knew that he was really being framed by someone, but he didn't have any clue who it could be. Supposedly, Cai Shaohong was not that person, then was it his accomplice? Quite possible.

He stood up, and took several jumps to leave the Weiming Lake. Soon he came to a deserted playground, and directly went towards a thick grove maze to hide and start his operation, uninterrupted. Thereafter he crossed his legs, sat down, and started condensing Yin Soul out.

(Lastvoice : Yin means negative and Yan means positive in the Chinese language.)

Yin Soul is a primordial spirit, which is divided into two forms, Yin Soul and Yang Soul. If a person possessed ten years of Yin Soul and 100 years of Yang Soul in the World of the Immortals, then he would become

extremely popular there.

With the help of ten years Cultivation, one could easily pour out Yin Soul, and could use it to sense everything around him in a certain range. The higher the Cultivation, the bigger the scope of sensation. A decade of Cultivation could make a person capable of sensing everything which came in the range of his 100 meters, regardless of whether it was static or a fast moving thing, anything could be easily sensed.

A hundred years Cultivation was needed to pour out Yang Soul, and that ability was really much bigger. However, Ye Feng had never thought about it, since he was very far away from that level yet.

By using his full strength, he revolved his Zhenqi very fast under his Dantian, and as a result, very soon a translucent empty Shadow emerged out from the top of his head. Since he had reached ten years Cultivation, so it had become extremely easy for him to condense Yin Soul out of his body smoothly! However, he had an edge, because he was already very much familiar with this Soul Search Technique, since when he was in the World of the Immortals.

Shua! Shua! Shua!

Three consecutive arrays of chilled wind proliferated all around Ye Feng's body and then they blew towards a thick grove, while producing a strong rustling sound.

Soul Search Technique finally succeeded!

At this time, when he closed his eyes, he felt everything which fell within a radius of a hundred meters.

Crying insects, spider web, pedestrians outside the playground, a few flies in the sky, mosquitoes swarm, ants under the ground, centipede ..... almost everything, as long as he wanted to feel, he would be able to sense it into his mind, just like how the naked eye could see picture clearly!

He opened his eyes, stabilised his whole body's Zhenqi and then heaved a sigh of relief finally.

Finally, it was the time when he could be completely fearless, no matter what kind of situation he was in, he didn't need to live in fear anymore. Until now, the gap between a martial artist and an Immortal Cultivator really began to show up.

His eyes flashed with coldness, so now he had to rush to Lin Clan's residence. In addition to making Su Menghan free from their custody, he also had to clarify things to Lin Clan. He would have to make them know that the main culprit was not him but Cai Shaohong. And besides this, it seemed like someone was trying to frame him. So instead of interrogating him, they must try to grasp that particular someone promptly.

## Chapter 120 - Soul Sealing Technique

---

Ye Feng stood up, lowered his head and looked at the wound which was there on his right leg, but it had already dried up.

“The firearms of NSA are really amazing, especially the bullets, not only their collision speed is too fast, but their destructive power is also remarkably enormous, to the extent where not even my Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace could succeed in escaping it ..... Fortunately, now I have Soul Search Technique, if any kind of situation crops up like before, then, this time, I won't give any opportunity to the opposite party to open fire again.”

Ye Feng thought in his heart, simultaneously, he turned over his hand, and immediately his right hand began exuding the golden colour ray of light.

An Immortal Technique – Holy Cure Technique!

This technique was considered as a type of fundamental Immortal Technique in the World of the Immortals, because literally, almost everyone used to have ten years of Cultivation there. The main function of this technique was a potent treatment of some skin related external injuries, moreover, it had also shown a terrifically good treatment result in restoration of damaged meridians.

Ye Feng was shot by the people of NSA on his right leg, which had terribly blown his leg and caused half a fist-sized blood hole. But now, he wanted to restore it, and that was not a big deal for him anymore.

By bringing the golden ray of light of his right hand close to his wound, he gradually pressed it on that blood hole. Instantaneously, the whole blasted place started recovering up super fast, even the naked eye could see how rapid its restoration was!

Not long after, his right leg, which had suffered a big injury, basically

fully recovered, leaving behind only a blood dried huge hole on his trousers. Then after, again he pressed his right hand's golden ray of light on his chest and another thigh, and as expected, they also recovered soon with a terrific speed.

Gradually, that golden ray of light vanished.

“It has consumed almost half of my Zhenqi, but again, I have already anticipated it.”

Ye Feng nodded with satisfaction, and then immediately stretched his hand and took out the Black Jar of Souls. It was a black-coloured box of almost two fist-sized, and basically, it looked like a cinerary casket, with a bit of spooky aura around it.

The zombie creator old man used to conveniently use this device to summon corpses and make them fight. This Jar was his medium to fetter one's souls into it. The Corpses which were summoned out of it, once they encountered serious damages, they used to immediately turn into the blue smoke, without leaving any trace.

As for Ye Feng, he wouldn't use it ever, since he was totally disinclined to use this kind of strange device. However, before going to meet Lin people, he just wanted to ascertain few things with Cai Shaohong.

So, when he waved his hand, instantly a wisp of translucent dark gray, cold wind appeared and gently brushed away the Black Jar of Souls. This Immortal Technique was called Gathering Soul Technique!

Moreover, this technique was not considered as an ordinary technique even in the World of the Immortals, because it was not like anyone could learn it easily. Although he used to follow Su Feiying, but even before meeting her, he randomly learnt this technique on his own, through his experience.

Gathering Soul Technique was further divided into three parts, Summoning Soul Technique, Sealing Soul Technique and Releasing Soul Technique.

Summoning Soul Technique is precisely used to summon a soul within

a range, which immediately turns into a translucent shape as soon as it is summoned. In addition, its translucent form is even clearly visible to the naked eye. In case a person has just died, and shortly after his death, his soul is summoned, then, in that case, his soul appears with his completely awaken consciousness.

Sealing Soul Technique is also used to summon a soul, however, it can only summon the already sealed soul. It doesn't matter whether it has been sealed a moment ago, or hundred years ago, what important is, after breaking its seal, its consciousness can still remain to a awaken state.

And as for Releasing Soul Technique, it is used to directly disperse the soul of an ordinary human, who has stayed in this human world. In other words, it grants salvation to the souls. Of course, it can only aim at ordinary souls.

Having this Immortal Technique meant to be able to collect all kind of information of any place, extremely fast, after all, which place doesn't have deceased people, and then their souls?

Once Ye Feng waved his hand, and a dark gray cold wind emerged and stroke the whole Black Jar of Souls, right after that, that jar began to vibrate fiercely, and was immediately followed by a translucent imaginary shadow of human figure, which flew out of it. Soon, one after another, several other souls also emerged out, however all of them were firmly fettered by Ye Feng's body.

Souls, which were summoned by Gathering Soul Technique, were generally unable to leave their summoner's body, beyond a certain range.

There were not several souls collected in this Black Jar, might be because in the modern city, seeing the dead people would not have been so common. Places like crematories, mortuaries, and so on, they had dead bodies, but again, these dead bodies were there from a long time ago, therefore, their souls had also already dispersed.

Cai Shaohong's soul was with him, with the same appearance which he had, right before his death. But at present, it had become as light as a



feather and had taken a translucent form. Surprisingly, there was still a trace of an inconceivable and panic-stricken look on his face.

The soul of Zhao Yibei was also summoned out along with others, which still had that delicate appearance. But his soul seemed a little incomplete and badly damaged, furthermore, his face had also suffered a heavy loss. When he saw Ye Feng, he was surprised.

Then after, there were several other souls as well, like the soul of Heavenly Sword Palace's pretty and flirtatious woman, Hai Tang, Tornado Axe, God Fist Gate's fellow apprentices, Luo Li and Luo Lei, and so on. However, all of them were looking same like Zhao Yibei's soul, incomplete and badly damaged. Moreover, the soul of Zhu Bainiao somehow didn't appear.

Ye Feng just wanted to clearly understand everything.

“It seems that gathering corpses to fight, in return damages their souls. And if this trend continues, and if they continue appearing over and over, then gradually this will affect their souls, making them disperse and then disappear .....

He couldn't see Zhu Bainiao, this made him feel somewhat a pity. Moreover, if his soul had been still available in that Black Jar, then Ye Feng wouldn't have needed to go to the East China Sea to obtain his hidden martial arts core technique or Crying Ghost Blade Technique. He could have made Scar begin to practice ahead of time.

Besides this, the soul of this man Zhu Bainiao could have been sealed up, so that if in the future, he got the opportunity to become a Soul Cultivator, then he could have become a big helping hand for Ye Feng.

Ye Feng glanced at the soul of Zhao Yibei, who was looking somewhat lost and incomplete, which left him with a feeling of uneasiness in his heart and ruined his mood, after all, Ye Feng owed him. And naturally, it was not the appropriate time to talk with him about the old days.

“Yibei, don't be puzzled, at present, you are in a soul state, I will use Soul Sealing Technique on you first. Then just wait for Soul Core Technique to awaken you again, after that you will be able to exist in this

world, in the shape of soul!”

Ye Feng solemnly explained that.

Zhao Yibei was originally in a state of semi-consciousness, so when he heard Ye Feng saying ‘Soul’, he was taken aback, Soul? Soul Sealing Technique? He thought that could it be that somehow he arrived in a strange world, where people’s consciousness was normally sealed away?

He still remembered that at a critical moment, he jumped in front of Ye Feng, and then he lost his consciousness, and until now, he was still muddleheaded. However, he really hadn’t expected that actually he would be awakened one day, even more, he had never thought that why Ye Feng seemed to be a Daoist priest or something like that?

Certainly, Ye Feng also had no time to explain everything to him carefully. He just smiled happily, then waved his hand, and cast Soul Sealing Technique on the crippled soul of Zhao Yibei!

Sealing Soul Technique needed a medium to seal a soul, and obviously, Ye Feng wouldn’t seal Zhao Yibei’s soul again in the Black Jar of Souls. Actually, he stretched out his right hand, as he decided to use Ancient Dragon Sword Ring as the medium for this technique.

Since Zhao Yibei’s soul had been summoned out frequently by that necromancer old man, therefore his soul had become somewhat damaged. Ye Feng had placed his hope in this idea that if he would seal him in his ring of Ancient Dragon Sword Ring, then it might turn out somewhat advantageous for his soul.

A cold wind blew and gently caressed the light soul of Zhao Yibei, which was similar to a blue smoke, and instantly he was pulled in his ring and disappeared.

This scene was actually being seen by all other souls present there at the moment, who were looking at him strangely, including Cai Shaohong, Hai Tang, Luo Lei, Luo Li and Tornado Axe.

Ye Feng swept his eyes towards those people, and then stuck his eyes on Cai Shaohong: “Cai Shao? Sorry, I had to take your life at any cost,

however, at present, I still hope that you will answer me a few questions honestly.”

“So it turns out like this, that you really wear a mask, I should have thought about this earlier.”

Cai Shaohong lowered his face and noticed that his translucent soul was floating around Ye Feng, and was looking very gloomy.

“Yes, but why?”

Encountering several souls at present, who were under his absolute control, making Ye Feng feel that now, he really didn’t mind revealing his identity in front of them. But this acknowledgement, how many people would be equally shocked seeing that at present, this young man, standing in front of them, wearing a mask, was called “Mo Jiuge”?

Suddenly, all of them clenched their jaws, and the reason was quite clear. Why wouldn’t they hate him, when they already knew that all of them, whether it was Hai Tang, Luo Li or Luo Lei, were killed by this masked man? As for Tornado Axe, of course, he still remembered that his close friend, Wolf Sword had been killed by Ye Feng’s friend, the masked man, by a hidden weapon!

## Chapter 121 - Lin Clan!

---

As Ye Feng noticed the fuming with anger facial expression of several souls, it planted a smile on Ye Feng's face in return.

He then glued his eyes directly on Cai Shaohong : “Cai Shao, right? Whatever you were trying to stir up in this country China, I know it now all along. Tell me now, how many accomplices you have, and where are they?”

Cai Shaohong gloomily just stared at him, while maintaining a silent form.

“Still, you are being stubborn.”

Ye Feng said that faintly, as he raised his hand, immediately a sudden gust of cold wind blew, “pop” and with a sound, the soul of God Fist Gate's Luo Li dispersed, and immediately turned into a burst of cold breeze, without leaving even the slightest bit of trace.

Henceforth, this person no longer existed in the world.

“If you won't speak out, then you will also end up like him, and will vanish from this world, forever.

Once again Ye Feng fixated his eyes on Cai Shaohong, and threatened him.

“Do you think I would be so stupid?”

While still holding a very calm expression on his face, Cai Shaohong replied to him contemptuously.

He was already dead, even if he spoke out everything, still, it was impossible to resurrect him. Hence, what was the point in answering to his questions now? Besides, for Cai Shaohong, cooperating Ye Feng was totally unacceptable, it was like wasting his time on this cheap person, Ye Feng.

On the other side, when the incomplete and badly damaged soul of Luo Lei saw that his brother Luo Li was immediately exterminated by Ye Feng, he turned a bit scared.

Ofcourse, the words of Cai Shaohong was making Luo Lei very uncomfortable. Just as he expected, Ye Feng lifted his hand and once again cast Releasing Soul Technique. Consequently, before Lu Lei could even think something, he felt that his already floating light soul, scattered in the air all of a sudden, making his consciousness return to nihility at once!

As for Luo Li and Luo Lei brothers, Ye Feng was not even the least bit considerate of. Although these two people's malevolent scheme had indirectly helped him and Long Wan'er, but the opposite party dared to set up a drug against Long Wan'er, how could this evil behaviour of these fellows imprint a good impression in Ye Feng's heart?

Thus, the souls of these two men finally disappeared from the world, leaving behind a serious warning to others!

“So really, you won't say anything, will you?”

Ye Feng tilted his head, and stared at him indifferently.

“You really have gotten guts there, so do I start?”

Cai Shaohong smirked.

Puff!

Without any mercy, Ye Feng, right away, cast his Releasing Soul Technique on him, making his soul scatter, and immediately turn into a smoke!

Soon, Ye Feng's mouth slightly curled upwards, this guy really had nothing to fear of, hadn't he? Unfortunately, Ye Feng didn't have any interest to carry on any kind of idle talks with a deceased person. For him, if the opposite party wasn't ready to cooperate him and speak anything, then his soul would be directly dispersed of.

Under the state of the soul, Ye Feng's hypnosis couldn't show any

effect. As for the highest level of Gathering Soul Technique – Searching Soul Technique, he had to wait at least 20 years before he could use his Cultivation. As of now, he had no other choice left than to extinguish the soul of Cai Shaohong, and then forget about him forever.

Who the associates and the back supporters of the opposite party were, if he hadn't received this answer yet, then wouldn't he have any other way to investigate it? So long as he found out the skeleton masked man from before, he still believed that all these unanswered things would be 100 % answered by him.

But he had few regrets left, like why Lin Xiuwen became a retard, and how the heavenly stone bead appeared in his secret room. These issues didn't have the means to be resolved now.

Ye Feng raised his head and looked towards the souls of Hai Tang and Tornado Axe.

Could these two people still dare to provoke him at this moment? Both of them were fluttering in the sky, quite away from Ye Feng, but still, they actually couldn't leave the body of Ye Feng, beyond the scope of around three meters. Because of the current incident, a terrified look had taken birth on their faces.

Regardless of whether it was a fierce and evil name of one of the Jiangsu Duo's Tornado Axe throughout the country China, or one of the members of Heavenly Sword Palace and Happily Married Couple of sword's Hai Tang, both of them were terror-stricken at the moment, because, at present they were facing the real threat of getting disappeared from the world, a kind of a natural fear!

Not to mention how resolute Ye Feng was, as far as the case of Cai Shao was concerned, he just asked something from him twice, and when he didn't get any reply, he directly exterminated him .....

All of them were deceased people, precisely, since they had already died once, therefore, they had become more terrorised by the true death.

“You can ask anything from me, and I promise that I will certainly answer everything! Just begging you, let me off.”

The beautiful face of this seductive woman, Hai Tang was appearing a little damaged, she said further : “Or, perhaps save me, then from now onwards, I will be always at your service .....

After saying that, her floating soul started stroking her hair coquettishly and making various actions for enticement.

Unfortunately, all these things were completely useless to Ye Feng, not to mention the fact that presently he didn't have any means to save her. Although, just now, he cast Sealing Soul Technique on Zhao Yibei, but in return, this technique consumed a tremendous amount of his Zhenqi. As of now, he had to immediately rush to the residence of Lin people, hence, in such a crucial time, he didn't want to let his Zhenqi get consumed, by any other useless activity

“You people, just go inside it for now, and when I need your help, I'll summon you out again.”

Ye Feng waved his hand, making the souls of both the people dragged inside the Black Jar of Souls instantly. Behind keeping the soul of Hai Tang, certainly Ye Feng had some reasons, probably he wanted to ask a few things about Heavenly Sword Palace. As for keeping Tornado Axe's soul, he thought that this guy probably might be aware of any good martial arts' consultant. Hence in the future, he might turn out quite useful.

Thenafter, he put away the Black Jar, and looked up towards the north direction.

Changping District of Yanjing city, it was in the north, about 20-30 kilometres away from Yanjing University, where the residence of Lin Clan was situated.

Ye Feng clenched his fist tightly, thought that tonight indeed was a sleepless night. Anyways, this matter with Lin Clan, he must try to do everything to resolve it and dispose it of, once and for all, completely tonight!

.....

In Yanjing City's Changping District.

The land area of the villa's park was quite broad, and was brightly lit as well, at this point of time. Furthermore, several Lin Clan's people had gathered here tonight, because what happened tonight, was really too shocking for everyone.

The Sanshao of Lin Clan, Lin Xiuwen somehow strangely became a mentally retard, and the one who was responsible for his this miserable condition was the masked man!

In the conference hall of the villa's spacious park, Lin Detian, Lin Zhiqing, and almost a dozen of Lin people, along with Thunder, the Captain of NSA, were sitting around the conference table, waiting for something.

"Second Brother, where is our Shiqing?"

Lin Xiuwen's father, Lin Rentian was a generation younger to Lin Detian, had a pair of glasses on his face, which was making him look very refined and decent man. However, there was a sullen look on his face at the moment. He was just quietly sitting in front of Lin Detian, when he asked that.

"She is in the hospital, taking care of that young lady of Xiao Clan."

Lin Detian looked dignified as he said: "In particular, what exactly the matter is, when Xiao Clan's girl will wake up, then we'll know about it clearly. However, as of now, most probably, that masked man is behind all this chaos. I have already given the order to trace the whereabouts of Ye Feng in the entire city, by using his phone signal. Just finding him out means there is still a hope to find that masked man. "

"I actually think that the kid will himself come over here."

Someone said: "His girlfriend is in our custody, even though if he doesn't dare to come over, won't it mean he is no less than a coward, and is ruining the name of Ye Clan?"

"Hmm, talking about this is triggering my angry, it was that Old man Ye, who had led his own son to such a miserable path, or else how could



he turn out so?”

Lin Detian said that with a bit of irritation.

“Now the time has arrived to consider how we should deal with this matter, if my son doesn’t get cured, then I will definitely turn over my face and fall out with Ye Clan!

Lin Rentian said that with a calm and collected face, this time, the most important thing for him was his son had turned into a retard. As for Cai Shaohong’s death, did he have any kind of relationship with Lin Rentian? Similarly, the death of those three men of NSA, had also nothing to do with him, since the NSA’s soldiers weren’t his men.

“No matter how, but I’ll certainly find that masked man out, even from all corners of the world. This matter has already threatened the national security.”

Lin Detian frowned, and angrily pounded on the table.

The Captain of NSA, Thunder was also sitting there, he wanted to say something, but had some hesitations, hence he couldn’t bring himself to share his views. As per him, there were already lots of questionable points related to this matter, and he could say that with 100 % guarantee, because he had done a thorough inspection of the spot, in every way possible, and on that basis, he had concluded that somehow Cai Shaohong seemed a bit suspicious character.

However now, all evidence had already been destroyed by the fire, so without any evidence, he couldn’t dare to utter a single word casually, in a baseless way.

Suddenly, at this moment, a roaring sound passed on from the conference hall’s door, bang!

“Where is Su Menghan?”

A young voice, filled with anger, resounded everywhere.

Everyone present in the conference hall, altogether turned back and looked towards the entrance of the room, which made them stunned for a

while, when they noticed that the door was kicked open by a guy, who was slowly coming inside, however, that person was not Ye Feng, then who was he?

Seeing him proudly coming inside, ticked off the anger of Lin Detian, and he angrily pounded on the table once again, at the same time, he stood up, and angrily said : “Thunder, take him under control!”

He was threatened by Lin Detian to come to the residence of Lin Clan, still, how could he show such arrogance? Did this kid seriously think that he was the true grandson of the Old man, Ye Wentian?

## Chapter 122 - I Am The Masked Man

---

Ye Feng came all the way to the Changping District rapidly, where he made some inquiries to know the location of Lin Clan's residence.

Finally, he reached outside the campus of Lin's Villa, and then by activating his Soul Search Technique, he swept around thoroughly, and soon found that many soldiers of the NSA were hidden around the villa, carrying fully-loaded rifles and heavily armed. Apparently, because of today's incident, the entire Lin's residence was under tight protection.

Having Soul Search Technique under command was making everything extremely convenient for him now. The situation within a radius of hundred meters of the range was now crystal clear to him, as he could easily sense that the surroundings had several people, guns and even dogs. Besides, it would take just a fraction of second for him, to check them out thoroughly with the help of this technique!

Immediately, by activating his Immortal Technique – Invisibility, he entered the villa's campus, where he strolled around for a while, and quite soon arrived at that area, where there was a hotel-styled building, which was situated almost in the middle of the campus.

Again by putting his Soul Technique into action, he explored the entire building in an instant, and sensed that currently, Su Menghan was in a room, on the third floor, of this hotel-styled building. In addition, there were two fully-armed NSA members standing at the room's door, guarding it. The whole scene was making it appear like she was kept under house arrest.

After a moment of careful observation, he concluded that the altitude of the floor of this building was extremely high. The third floor had already thirty meters of height, which was making it impossible even for Ye Feng to jump up directly to the third floor. Even if he jumped up, but still he couldn't succeed in intruding into and taking her away.

One must know that at present, he had taken the identity of Ye Feng, hence he couldn't expose his Cultivation at any cost!

As for putting on the mask to save others, it could only be said that he really liked to do that a lot. But in this tightly guarded place, he came over relying on the identity of Ye Feng, even more, he also had to ensure his safety. In case, he changed into the identity of the masked man, then wouldn't he be shot on the spot, by NSA's soldiers?

Therefore, before he arrived in front of the door of that hotel-styled building, he released his Invisibility. Thenafter, he kicked open the front door, and walked in!

"Where is Su Menghan?"

Ye Feng opened his mouth and shouted out loud. Although he shouted this sentence, but actually he didn't want any answer, it was just like he wanted to gain the upper hand by showing his strength in front of them.

As for the current situation in that assembly hall, he already knew about it clearly by using his Soul Search Technique earlier. He already had sensed that there were more than a dozen people inside, and most of them were Lin, besides Thunder, the Captain of the National Security Agency was also there.

As he stormed into the hall, all roaring, almost everyone stood up together.

"Thunder, put him under control!"

Lin Detian was the first one to respond. Fuming with anger, he pounded his hand on the table, and then immediately rose up, pointed his fingers at Ye Feng and said that.

"Come on, I'm not here to fight, then what's the use of controlling me? Can't we better discuss the things related with the masked man?"

Ye Feng waved his hand.

As his words came out, it really changed the facial expression of everyone. At present, in Lin Clan, who wasn't interested to know who

exactly the masked man was?

“Who exactly is this man, whom from the martial arts circle is his master, which martial arts school does he belong to?”

Lin Rentian, the father of Lin Xiuwen, was certainly the first person who was most concerned about this issue. Still, by holding a calm face, he fired those questions in a stern voice, his gentle and refined bespectacled face had some distortions at this moment.

Very obviously, his son had turned into a retard, this thing had really hit him hard.

“He is a friend of mine, as for the rest of the things, I’m sorry, but I really don’t know anything.”

Ye Feng said that in an unusual manner, like a hoodlum, meanwhile, after walking thirty-two steps straight, he at last arrived forward next to the conference table, and sat down.

“Since you don’t have the sincerity, then it seemed like we don’t have anything to talk about right now.”

All of a sudden, the facial expression of Lin Rentian turned even more unsightly, basically, his intellectual form had completely vanished at this moment, and he was looking like a bison of a doting parent.

“No, no, in fact, I mean to say that your target for retaliation, don’t you think you have made a mistake choosing it?”

Ye Feng cleverly changed the thread of discussion, and asked that in a very calm and composed manner.

“Hmm, there is authentic evidence of this matter, then how might I make a mistake?”

Lin Rentian coldly snorted, as he pushed his spectacles up the bridge of his nose.

“Quite good.”

From aside, Lin Detian also continued : “Before his death, Cai Shaohong had given me a call, and said that not only Lin Xiuwen was

injured by the masked male, but Xiao Qi was also abducted by him. Later on, in his own villa, he was killed by someone, and I am 100 % sure that it was the same person, that masked man. Furthermore, after that, the masked man also set off fire, and destroyed his corpse, along with all evidence .....

“And the motive?”

Ye Feng calmly asked one.

“His motive is temporarily not clear, however, on the basis of our preliminary investigation, I can say that he did this for something in Cai Shaohong’s villa.”

This time, Thunder couldn’t help but stood up and said that from the fair standpoint.

“Like I said before, he attacked Xiao Qi as well as Lin Xiuwen, but for what?”

Ye Feng shook his head and continued asking questions, back to back.

“This is exactly the place where I have some doubts.”

Without waiting for others to jump in, Thunder grab the opportunity and replied first, then he looked towards Lin Detian and Lin Rentian, and in a low voice, said: “Just heard the news, in the apartment community, where Xiao Qi lives, there, a corpse of an old man was found, and it seems that he should be from the martial arts world, and had about twenty years Cultivation .....

At present, there were many key figures, who held an enormous power in this country, present on the scene, and they all had a sort of good understanding of the martial arts world, to a certain extent.

Depending on the limited information, presently, no one could figure out that afterall, at that time, what exactly had happened there. As of now, there were basically two most crucial characters who could solve this case in a tweak, and they were Xiao Qi and that masked man. Unfortunately, one was unconscious and lying in the hospital, while the second one was missing.

“This matter doesn’t need too much speculation for the time being.”

Lin Detian knocked the table, and in a sinking voice, said: “Although after the death of Cai Shaohong, Thunder was sent to make a thorough search throughout the villa for evidence, but the masked man appeared again, and not only he killed three elites of NSA, but also destroyed all the evidence.”

“It’s hilarious.”

Ye Feng smiled : “Ok let’s assume, even if my friend was responsible for the destruction of evidence, and on top of that, the destruction of the evidence inside the Cai Shaohong’s villa. But why don’t you think, what things would be there in his villa which had been destroyed by him?”

Thunder looked at him as he said: “Indeed, there were a lot of things in the basement, which was very suspicious .....

“Enough.”

While pushing his glasses up, Lin Rentian stood up and pointed at Ye Feng: “Don’t try to change the subject, currently, both Xiuwen and Xiao Qi are lying in the hospital, Pei Keang Group’s Cai Shaohong and three elites of NSA have already been killed by the masked man. It is the fact that he is the only one to be blamed for, therefore, he must be restrained according to the law. ”

Then he looked all around, and continued: “Does everybody think so? That masked man, not only he destroyed our country’s friendly relations with Pei Keang Group, but also posed the threat to the national security, he must be definitely regarded as the provocation to those military people!”

Those military people, Lin Rentian used to looked down upon them very much, because they were also the mediators of the martial arts world.

However, compared to Lin Rentian, other Lin people were still relatively rational, or it might be because, they had lost nothing in this incident. Hence, it was easy for them to stay calm, moreover, they also

didn't want to involve in such a troublesome matter.

“Ah, this thing, it still needs a careful discussion in detail.”

“Yes, a lot of things which haven't been investigated thoroughly, or just wait for Xiao Clan's girl to wake up and explain everything correctly.”

This kind of matter was generally handled by Lin Detian, the head of the Clan, as well as the head of NSA, who was held responsible for maintaining national security, as well as handling the contradictions between the secular world and the martial arts world, and blending them efficiently.

However, Lin Detian was different.

“Ye Feng, still just tell us the whereabouts of the masked man, you are the grandson of Old man Ye, I, your uncle, won't embarrass you.”

Putting on a dignified look on his face, Lin Detian made his way through persuasion.

However at this moment, Ye Feng chuckled, as he pulled out a white grimace face mask from his bosom, and suddenly put it on his face: “I am that masked man, do you believe it?”

This act surprised everyone present on the scene, terrifically!

Even the Lin people, who had been originally calm all along, had their eyes wide open at this moment. What, was it a joke, was Ye Feng really the masked man?

“You just look at your reaction, cracking a joke in such a critical situation, as for what?”

Ye Feng smiled, took off the mask, and then swayed it a couple of time: “It's just like whosoever wears the mask, is my friend, right? With your brain, can a mask only represent the identity of a person? Anyone who wants to become the masked man, can buy a mask from the roadside stalls at ten Yuan per piece. ”



## Chapter 123 - Xiao Qi's Abduction

---

These words, said by Ye Feng, were equivalent to giving a slap to the face of Lin Clan, on the scene. After all, merely relying on a mask to identify the identity of the person, didn't it mean, their IQ had also reduced a bit?

But the fact was if Lin Clan could become the leading Clan in the entire Yanjing city, then naturally, the members of Lin Clan might not be as idiotic as they posed to be.

Regarding the other Lin people present on the scene, they didn't much consider this matter, because firstly, since this matter was not directly related to them, and secondly, they also didn't personally experience this thing. Hence, whatever they heard from the mouth of Lin Dentian and Lin Rentian, naturally, they didn't go deep into thinking about this. Because, their energy and thoughts were still moving around other relatively more important affairs, as well those things which could fulfil their own interests.

However, in the case of Lin Rentian, because his son turned into a retard, so he flew into a rage out of humiliation. His son's IQ became like a baby, this point actually didn't matter to him that much.

As for Lin Dentian, being the head of Lin Clan as well as the leader of the National Security Agency Department, he was bound to deal with this thing, to give an account to everyone, including the higher authorities as well as Pei Keang Group, which was also an extremely important burning issue currently.

In this kind of circumstances, regardless of anything, an essential point was must seize a scapegoat anyhow. It no longer mattered whether Cai Shaohong had done anything wrong or not, what mattered was the masked man had killed him, and this had become an undeniable fact!

Actually, Thunder was the only one among all, who was being a little uncomfortable seeing all this. He was an honest man, unlike this kind of politician, Lin Dentian. Moreover, as the captain of the National Security Agency, he must do everything to protect the national security.

Based on his intuition, Cai Shaohong was involved in something dangerous, and soon he was about to bring his dangerous plan into action, which could have been a serious threat to the national security of this country China. But unfortunately, he couldn't find any evidence to prove this point.

“There can be several people who wear masks, but the skill that masked man has, can't be seen everywhere.”

Lin Dentian said lightly : “To be able to escape in the secret room, even more than that, killing the three elites of National Security Agency, as well as, destroying the evidence completely, quite intelligently, this sort of skill is generally rarely seen in the entire martial arts world.”

“Despite everything, since you have insisted on thinking like this, therefore, nothing can be done now. However, what I actually expect, when Xiao Qi wakes up and speaks out everything clearly, then, at that time, where would you go to hide your face?”

Ye Feng smiled and changed the subject : “Right Su Menghan, the magnificent and dignified Clan of Yanjing, Lin clan, probably only knows how to bully a high school girl, right?”

“The whereabouts of the masked man, just say it and I will let her go.”

Lin Dentian said.

“You let her off first, then I will reconsider whether I want to betray my friend or not.”

Ye Feng raised his head and while looking at him, said : “You also know this kind of betraying a friend matter, any person can suffer a huge mental pressure because of it. If I don't see Su Menghan before, I won't consider this matter.”

A wrangle? Ye Feng could also do that!

“Hmm, then you are considered to be that sort of useless friend.”

By pushing his eyeglasses aside, Lin Rentian contemptuously said : “What can he give you? What can you give him? You both are just a sort of useless friends. And here you are talking about betraying! Even if you don’t betray him, will he even think of coming over here and help you save your woman?”

Ye Feng immediately fired his glance at him, naturally, he would never agree to this kind of standpoint.

“Just put Su Menghan out, otherwise, it’ll be just a waste of time, for both of us, that’s all.”

Just like a rogue, Ye Feng crossed his legs, while sitting around the conference table, and roughly said.

Lin Dentian was also a very decisively figure, seeing this argument going on in a more complicated direction, he finally waved : “Thunder, send someone to fetch her down here.”

If this kind of stalemate situation continued, then it wouldn’t be advantageous to him. Anyway, he caught Su Menghan just to attract Ye Feng over here. Although he showed up now, but if he wouldn’t cooperate with him, then his whole plan would be ruined. In his opinion, Ye Feng was just an ordinary high school student, although had a very good psychological quality, but since a girl was involved in this case, therefore, to slip away from here was almost impossible for him.

Lin Rentian wasn’t feeling well, he just sat down. There was an ashtray in front of him, on the table, which was already full of cigarette ashes, anyone could guess by seeing it, how anxious he was right now.

Soon, two members of the National Security Agency, fully armed, led Su Menghan down from the upstairs. At this moment, clad in a white one-piece dress, Su Menghan was looking gorgeous, very pure and delicate, with a pleasant face like always. The moment her eyes fell on Ye Feng, her heart jumped with happiness, and she ran 32 steps straight, to come close to him.

Seeing her finally in front of his eyes, Ye Feng finally smiled from the bottom of his heart, and embraced her into his arms: “Are you all right?”

“Yes, I’m ok, they didn’t capture me for ..... Actually you .....

In the middle of saying something, Su Menghan looked around, and suddenly an anxious looking expression crawled on her face.

“Relax, all these people are on our side.”

Ye Feng comforted her by stacking up a soft smile and patting her shoulder.

“Well, now you can say, where is that masked man?”

Impatiently, Lin Rentian broke off a cigarette with his hand, and covetously looked at him.

“My apologies, but I still really don’t know. I’m sorry for deceiving you.”

Ye Feng said that again like a rogue. At this moment, there was a very ugly appearance on his face, like a dead pig who does not fear the boiling water.

“You!”

Lin Rentian pounded on the table, and suddenly stood up, even his eyeglasses almost fell to the ground.

This kid, how could he be so shameless?

“Ye Feng, you are trying to take advantage of your status as the grandson of Old man Ye, how dare you try to make a din in our Lin Clan.”

A touch of coldness appeared on the face of Lin Dentian : “As I can see, you are not afraid of creating lots of confusions here, I assure you, even your grandfather can’t protect you from me!”

“Afraid, I’m extremely afraid. Therefore, you better let us go quickly, then I won’t cause more trouble for you people.”

Ye Feng softly pulled Su Menghan’s little hand and smiled.

“Don’t even imagine that.”

Lin Rentian straightened up his eyeglasses, and fiercely shouted out loud : “Seize him and also hold him here, if the relationship between him and that masked man is really that good, then he will certainly walk right into our trap!”

He actually wanted to capture Ye Feng and held him as the hostage.

Ye Feng shrugged his shoulders as if he indicated that it didn't matter to him. This kind of nonsense talk and delay would continue like this until Xiao Qi would wake up and clarify the things. Then only the truth would come into the light. The masked man had saved her twice, she wouldn't definitely speak anything venomous about the masked man, would she?

Moreover, Xiao Qi was taken to Cai Shaohong's basement, where she was supposed to be killed, since she had already seen a lot of things, like that strange fellow, which was one of the secrets of Cai Shaohong.

For Ye Feng, all these points were very beneficial evidence to solve this case

However, right at this time, when both the sides were caught in a deadlock situation, all of a sudden Lin Dentian's cell phone rang up and he quickly answered the phone.

“Dad, not good.”

A clear, pleasant and familiar female voice, with a hint of anxiousness passed on, it was Lin Shiqing : “Just a moment ago, Xiao Qi was carried away by a masked man from the hospital!”

At this moment, Ye Feng's Soul Search Technique was already active, therefore, he heard everything from quite afar, which made him wrinkle his eyebrows tightly.

Correct, as expected, just like how Cai Shaohong's accomplice destroyed all the evidence, similarly, he couldn't let Xiao Qi off like this!

Unwise!

Ye Feng turned very dignified at this moment, and somewhat despised

the opposite party.

“But, he has left behind a note, with an address written on it.”

Lin Shiqing continued.

“Tell me the address.”

Lin Dentian said without a bit of hesitation.

Very quickly, she said the address, it was the address of an abandoned factory which was situated in a remote suburb area of Yanjing, and had already been uninhabited. However, Ye Feng couldn't understand what the plan of the masked man was, behind leaving a note with the address.

“Thunder, bring your squad and start preparation for action.”

Lin Dentian waved his hand and hurriedly passed the order, then he turned his gaze towards another 27 or 28 years old young man, who was present on the scene : “Xiuwu, you also bring your group, and get prepared for an urgent military operation, on a standby.”

“Alright!”

That 27-28 years old youth, named Lin Xiuwu, had an unusually valiant appearance, was the Regimental Commander of the fourth Security Regiment of Yanjing's military region garrison force. This group was called as the fast contingency troop, and they always used to be in light adornment. Basically, they were responsible for the security of Yanjing, and were usually sent out in a small group.

“Thunder, seize Ye Feng and take him along with us, we'll now set out.”

Lin Dentian said that, as he shot a glance at Ye Feng, and thought that the opposite party had Xiao Qi as the hostage, hence, he would also capture Ye Feng to use him as their hostage.

For Ye Feng, actually, this didn't matter.

He just wanted to see very much, who the opposite party was and after all what he was trying to pull out!

## Chapter 124 - Lin Rentian's Job

---

The operation was jointly led by Thunder and Lin Xiuwu. The plan was, on one hand, with a bunch of people, Thunder would rush towards Military District Hospital for proper investigation of the scene. While on the other hand, Lin Xiuwu would lead the fourth Guards Regiment, by keeping them on standby, moreover, their target location to assemble wouldn't be very far away.

Confronting such a terrible masked man was not something anyone could handle, even the fourth elite guard regiment could only act as a scout, while the real fighting thing would be literally done by the NSA members, directly under the leadership of Thunder.

The sophisticated and precise firearms equipment along with the superior personal qualities, were the specialities and assets of the National Security Agency, and the so-called the mediator of the martial arts world.

“Let's go and have a look together.”

Ye Feng pulled Su Menghan close to him, since, at this crucial moment, he must stick to her side, in order to ensure her safety. He was just waiting for this matter to end soon, thereafter, they would return to their villa, where he would give her a Lingshi and make her begin the absorption process, to promote her Cultivation, so as to help her build even a little self-defence capability, to face a dangerous situation, like the current one confidently.

While at this moment, the other Lin people were mostly scattered, leaving behind only Lin Detian, Lin Rentian and Thunder's NSA squad, who were about to go to the hospital first.

Altogether thirty people, fully armed, were present on the scene, who were able to bring out their best fighting strength, directly under the

command of Thunder. While the rest of the people must stay in the Villa's campus, all alert. One must know that his small team had more than forty people altogether.

Ye Feng and Su Menghan together boarded on a green coloured military truck, and sat next to Lin Rentian, which made Lin Rentian stare at them somewhat maliciously, through his eyeglasses.

At this moment, his son was lying in a hospital, but this pair of young lovers was actually talking and smiling merrily, so, how could he be in a good mood?

Ye Feng also glanced at him, while thinking that Lin Xiuwen must be a sex maniac person, he had listened to Cai Shaohong's slanderous talk, how could he appear so late in Xiao Qi's room, and then turned into a retard?

However, Ye Feng's mind was at peace now, because, this matter had nothing to do with him.

Su Menghan also sat beside him, and tightly held his arm. She never had thought her life would become such mighty waves, but still believed that it would certainly calm down before her college entrance exam.

However, suddenly she thought of something and her mind changed, the moment Ye Feng taught her Immortal Cultivation, since then her life was destined to be no longer ordinary. Such a thing happened today, perhaps it was just a trifle thing, like a trailer .....

Soon, two green coloured military trucks, carrying more than twenty people, pulled out all the way roaring towards Yanjing's Military District Hospital.

The medical system of Yanjing city was incredibly excellent in the whole country, especially the military hospitals. Only because of the powerful influence of Lin Clan, Lin Xiuwen was admitted here normally, and as for Xiao Qi, just because she had a good relationship with Lin Shiqing, she also got admitted here.

But how unfortunate these two people were, one became a retard, and



other was kidnapped. What more surprising, a people could be kidnapped from this military district hospital! It proved that the masked man was indeed extremely talented !

The vehicle barely stopped, and immediately an anxious-looking face of Lin Shiqing popped up. Actually, she was waiting for them outside, at the entrance of the hospital.

Still holding the arm of Ye Feng, Su Menghan got down, however, seeing Lin Shiqing standing there, she couldn't help but pinch him secretly. She thought that Ye Feng couldn't disappear today along with Lin Shiqing like the previous time, because, didn't so many mind-baffling things have happened here today? However, at present, Lin Shiqing was looking so attractive, which forced Su Menghan to feel extremely jealous of her.

Ye Feng had been pinched by Su Menghan, but he didn't have any alternative. The only thing he could do right now was to wait helplessly, until he finally got a free time to make things clear to her, including the matter related to Immortal Cultivation. He also had to tell her about the masked man's identity, Cai Shaohong's issue and so on, although they were not so important matters.

Clad in a shirt and short skirt, Lin Shiqing was looking so exquisite and alluring, her beautiful, fuller and plump bosom, which was shaking rhythmically at the moment, was making Ye Feng unable to bear but throw several glances towards it.

“Little Ye, how did you come .....

Lin Shiqing ran up to him and stood still beside him. While gently teasing her hair a bit, she noticed that Ye Feng was looking a little strange.

“Because I am related to that masked man, therefore, I was brought.”

While putting out his hands, Ye Feng said : “Oh, by the way, that person who kidnapped Xiao Qi, what kind of mask had he worn? Something like this?”

He asked that, while taking the white grimace face mask out.

This question was supposed to be asked by Lin Detian, therefore, he didn't interrupt into their conversation. He just looked at his daughter, as if waiting for a reply.

"It was not so, he has a black human skeleton face mask."

Lin Shiqing shook her head and explained a bit.

Ye Feng heard that, and instantly realized who this man was, originally!

At present, the Skeleton masked man was the only person who knew the ins and outs of Cai Shaohong to a great extent. He must have already guessed that Xiao Qi might be in danger, therefore, he came here early to take Xiao Qi away beforehand, and left a note.

Now Ye Feng was quite certain that the address written on the note, must be something big. That suburb abandoned factory must have some hidden secrets of Cai Shaohong. So long as they would go over there and examine the scene to ferret out something, the truth would definitely come into light!

"The Skeleton masked man knows nothing about the martial arts, therefore, he can't kidnap anyone like this, from the military hospital, which uses to be under such a tight supervision, then he must have used some smart means. Indeed he is a talented person."

Ye Feng couldn't help but think so.

While, at this time, on the other side, Lin Shiqing was busy inquiring something from her father Lin Detian. And when she came to know that not even Cai Shahong's corpse could be saved, she slightly frowned.

"If this being the case, then wouldn't it be very troublesome? The influence of Pei Keang Group in the international arena is not so small, besides, it also has plenty of seats in the United States Senate and House of Representatives ....."

She said with a clear voice, although her tone had a touch of little

concern, but it was enough to make her father, Lin Detian listen to her somewhat strangely. At such a critical moment, how could his own daughter be so calm, and on top of that, still could calmly think about the relations between the two countries? The death of Cai Shaohong, didn't it hit her hard, and grow a feeling of sorrow in her heart?

Lin Detian immediately glanced at Ye Feng, and thought that if he would let his father, Old man Lin know that Ye Feng had a connection with that martial artist, who was responsible for this miserable condition of Lin Xiuwen, then what would have, whether his father would still insist on the engagement of these two people or not?

Who didn't know, Lin Xiuwen was the most beloved and favourite grandson of his father, Old man Lin! But Ye Feng was also a grandson of someone else afterall, so could he be compared?

“Or, we should go directly to the abandoned factory.”

Ye Feng raised a suggestion : “As long as we find out some evidence to prove Cai Shahong's secret operation in this country China, Pei Keang Group will absolutely not dare to turn over its face from our country.”

Whether it was gene experiment, or the use of new drugs, weren't they internationally explicitly banned? Pei Keang Group could never dare to come forward, by putting these affairs on the table!

“Secret operation?”

Both Lin Detian and Lin Shiqing gawked together, they really didn't know that Cai Shaohong had set his foot in China with a secret operation.

Seeing their reaction, Ye Feng could only sigh with sorrow that Cai Shaohong had also been in disguise all along. He always had entirely dependent on his subordinates to handle matters as per his instructions, and had never appeared himself, making Lin Clan never doubt on him, not even the slightest bit.

“Chief, I also have some doubts about this thing.”

Nearby standing Thunder, with a serious looking face, said dignifiedly:

“In the basement of Cai Shaohong’s villa, we indeed noticed many suspicious things there. So instead, how about if we better go directly to the abandoned factory?”

Actually, the unspoken implication was, they didn’t need to stay at the hospital anymore. Only Lin Xiuwen would be left in the hospital, as he didn’t need anyone to watch him attentively.

“It’s not a good idea, my son must have someone to protect him!”

Lin Rentian immediately stood up, wearing a square-shaped eyeglasses, his face appeared so dangerous, as if fuming with anger.

“This thing can be handled by the police.”

Lin Detain took the decision instantly, then waved his hand, making the men of Thunder, along with Ye Feng, Su Menghan, Lin Shiqing and the remaining Lin people depart together!

Protection of a retard, did it really need the NSA’s elite soldiers?

Although Lin Xiuwen was the member of Lin Clan, but usually Lin Detian never liked his rampant and lecherous nature. If he were his own son, then he would have already beaten him so much, until his bottom burst open.

Lin Rentian didn’t keep up with them, instead, he bitterly stamped his foot, while looking at those two military trucks quickly departing, which in return triggered his anger even more than before.

At this time, suddenly a thought hit his mind. He correctly remembered that a while back, didn’t someone mention about the case, saying that a few years ago, someone killed an old woman? Ah, this criminal case of that private prosecution, wasn’t it filed by Su Menghan’s people, against a pair of Xie Clan’s siblings?

Lin Rentian’s face suddenly brightened up just by recalling this case, he would never let anything good happen to Su Menghan and in her favour.

There was no mistake about Lin Rentian’s job status, he was the

President of Yanjing’s first People’s Court, and the committee member of the Judicial Commission!

## Chapter 125 - Wilderness Attack

---

Two green coloured military trucks, along the rugged path, advanced towards the destination place where the abandoned factory was.

“Report the Chief, 450 people of my regiment have already encircled the target location, they have surrounded the abandoned factory in the range of two kilometres!”

Soon, a soldier of the Fourth Guard Regiment delivered a letter, carrying an information report.

“Be on guard, don’t act rashly.”

Lin Detian said that and immediately hung up the phone.

Then his eyes shifted towards Ye Feng : “Ye Feng, if your friend is playing with us, then I am certainly going to be very impolite and rude to you.”

At present, Lin Detian was not as confident as Ye Feng’s firm belief that something important would definitely appear in the abandoned factory. In case, such a huge force was mobilised there, but in the end, they ended up empty-handed with zero results, then certainly Lin Detian would hold Ye Feng responsible for all this.

Ye Feng didn’t say anything, just smiled gently.

He still strongly believed in the skeleton masked man, as per him, since the other masked man was directing them to proceed towards the abandoned factory, then certainly that abandoned factory would have something noteworthy. Moreover, he was himself quite sure about this, therefore he led Xiao Qi there to hide and wait until a crucial moment came up, and they were forced to appear. It seemed like he was just using Xiao Qi to expose the evil plans of Cai Shaohong out.

Of course, the prior condition was that Skelton masked man indeed

cooperated with Ye Feng, therefore, there was 90 percent possibility that something fruitful might happen there.

The location of the abandoned factory was not very far away from Changping District. Those two trucks howled around ten minutes, and already arrived at the scene.

Under the darkness of the night, one could faintly see from quite a distance that the soldiers of the Fourth Guard Regiment were standing there, forming an encirclement ring outside the abandoned factory, at a distance of two kilometres of range.

“Chief.”

Lin Xiuwu marched forward, came in front of the truck, and then while facing the truck, he saluted Lin Detian as a formality and honoured his position, since the position of the Chief couldn't be avoided.

However, suddenly his eyes got attracted towards similarly sitting on the truck, Lin Shiqing. Under the faint moonlight, her appearance was looking even more beautiful. As for this young lady, always being harsh Lin Xiuwu could never allow anything wrong happen to her. He thought that in future, whoever would be able to marry her, would have an enormously big fortune.

But, at such a dangerous place, why did she come and what did she want to do?

“Xiuwu, you continue to be on guard, if there will be any critical situation or information, report me anytime, instantly. Thunder, we will proceed towards that factory, and we will stop, when we will be one kilometre away from it.”

Lin Detian commandingly said that.

“Chief, approaching close to it might be dangerous, you .....

Thunder hesitated a bit, while at the same time, he also gazed at Lin Shiqing, who was sitting upright nearby. He just wanted to make both of them stay in the periphery of the outer encirclement ring.

“All right, since we have you for our protection, so I can feel relieved.”

Lin Detian smiled.

“Yes.”

By clenching his teeth, Thunder nodded. He wasn't complacent because of Lin Detian's trust on him, instead, he felt increased burden on his shoulders now.

No matter what kind of dangerous situation Lin Detian would encounter ahead, he would still stand firmly on the front line, and would never plan to shrink back because of the danger. And this was his special trait which was highly admired by Thunder.

“Young lady, you .....

Lin Xiuwu looked at Lin Shiqing, as he wanted to make her get off the truck and stay here in the outer circle.

“No need to say that, I will stay together with my dad.”

Lin Shiqing firmly said, simultaneously looked at Ye Feng and Su Menghan, and thought that if these two people didn't flinch, then how could she retreat in the midway? Wasn't it an abandoned factory where the masked man was, what was there to be afraid of?

However, when she noticed that the relationship between Ye Feng and Su Menghan was very intimate, an inexplicable sour thought immediately took birth in her heart. The engagement which her Grandfather had arranged earlier, if it involved some other man, then most likely without demur, she would have gone wild with joy and had also agreed to it, but this wasn't the case with Ye Feng.

Su Menghan was really lucky since she had this kind of man.

What a pity, Lin Shiqing was that sort of person, who always used to wear a mask to live peacefully, when would she meet with the right man who would truly make her heart beat for him? It was very strange, regarding Cai Shaohong's death, she wasn't sad a bit, on the contrary, she was very curious to know that who would have such a big enmity and



so much hatred for Cai Shaohong, that he went so far and even destroyed his corpse without leaving any trace?

“Protect the Chief and Miss Lin. Everyone get ready for the battle, Let’s go!”

Thunder waved his hand and issued the order.

Both military trucks quickly started and proceeded towards the inside circle of the abandoned factory. Ye Feng, Su Menghan, Lin Detian and Lin Shiqing, all of them were sitting in the backseat of the open-air truck. In front of their truck, there was the first truck, which was being led directly by Thunder.

Under the dim light and silence of the night, the sound of the trucks, running on the road, was very obvious.

Ye Feng proliferated his Soul Search Technique all around, simultaneously became all prepared to alert the surrounding people at any moment.

Enormously overgrown huge weeds were widely spread and had already captured the surrounding area, the entire abandoned factory was also surrounded by wilderness. This place was too far away from the city, even if someone wanted to develop this region, but how to do that, it would be a big problem.

Under the dim light of the night, when all sides were surrounded by the darkness, in such a case, special tools were required, otherwise, it was simply impossible to see things too far away. Only a man’s height tall weeds could be seen in this darkness, almost everywhere, swaying in the icy-cold night wind, like ghosts and demons.

The gloomy environment, along with the repeatedly blowing heart-chilling, icy-cold night wind, making Su Menghan shrink her body, and lean upon the arms of Ye Feng.

However, suddenly, several strange things, with an extremely fast speed, rushed out from the huge weeds present on both sides of the road, and with a lightning fast speed, they fired toward the two trucks.

Altogether there were eight hairy strange freaks in front of them rightnow!

Ye Feng immediately reacted, subconsciously enclasped Su Menghan, and became all set to immediately act as per the required situation.

“Enemy attack!”

Besides Ye Feng, the NSA soldiers, who were also responsible for the security, they also similarly discovered the silhouette of the invading enemy, and made a loud noise at once to alert everyone. Unfortunately, their quick reaction was still too slow, the speed of the opposite party was beyond their imagination.

Bang!

Altogether eight long-haired strange fellows, in tattered windproof long coat, crossing over hundred meters distance in just 32 steps, had already arrived at the side of those two military trucks. And then, immediately few of them abruptly came in front of the truck and obstructed the momentum of the advancing truck!

Bang!

“Roar!”

In the astonishment of the vigorous strength of those strange creatures, the two trucks, without prior indication, overturned and rolled away with a massive velocity. The incredible strength of these freaks was actually very dreadful and instantly caused a predicament!

“Protect the Chief!”

Two members of the National Security Agency, immediately supported Lin Detian with their arms, and directly jumped down the truck along with him, and safely rolled to one side! Moreover, Lin Shiqing also got the similar treatment, after all, she was also a very important personage, so, the first priority was to ensure their safety.

Soon, the entire truck was completely overturned in the field, however, the NSA members onboard, including the driver, showed a rapid

reaction, and consequently, no casualty took place.

However, after getting off the truck, the warriors promptly raised their precision firearms in their hands, and immediately fired in a split second. More than a dozen of blue-ray bullets, with a terrifying speed, which was three times higher than the velocity of sound, were shot towards those long-haired strange fellows, who had originally overturned the truck.

Ping! Ping! Ping!

Those strange freaks, who had just overturned a heavy truck, were already staggering. At this moment, it was quite impossible for them to escape, hence, when they were shot all of a sudden, the might of huge bullets exploded and formed several holes all over their body.

As a consequence, six of them fell to the ground on the spot, and were no longer moving. However, one of them was still struggling to get up, without any extra effort, he smoothly pounded down a punch towards one of the members of the NSA.

Bang!

Under the night sky, the fresh blood splashed out, just like how the watermelon juice splashed, it was really a horrible sight.

A strange force, which was capable enough to overturn such a heavy truck so easily, if used to smash the head of the person, then what would be the scene?

But surprisingly, another strange creature, who was a little hurt and was unable to stand up, since he was the one who tried to stop the momentum of the running truck, roared at once, and rolled on the ground, advancing directly towards Lin Shiqing, like a crazy beast.

“Protect Miss Lin!”

Several members of the NSA immediately reacted by putting out their guns and all set to shoot.

However, the speed of that long-haired giant was way too fast!

Almost within an instant, when Lin Shiqing was just trying to turn over and stand up, suddenly she smelled the stench smell, and the next moment, an ugly hairy freak, arrived in front of her and stretched his hand to grab her.

As a quick reaction, the beautiful pupil of Lin Shiqing suddenly contracted, what was this monster afterall?!

## Chapter 126 - The Golden Sword!

---

Before coming to this place, Lin Shiqing hadn't thought that she would bump into such a strange scenario.

Originally she thought that this abandoned factory would be just an ordinary hiding place, where the masked man would have hidden Xiao Qi after abducting her. And he did so, just to threaten Lin Clan and talk about his conditions at this place. However now when she looked back, she felt that she was really completely mistaken.

The whole body of this strange fellow was covered with hair, he was looking very scrawny, with deep eye sockets, but still his strength was surprisingly huge, even his eyes were emitting the terrifying green light. What actually was this thing?

Could it be that indeed this abandoned factory had some hidden secrets about Cai Shaohong and Pei Keang Group, just like how Ye Feng had pointed out earlier?

She couldn't help but make a quick conjecture, however, the present situation didn't allow her to think much.

It was really frightening to see how that long-haired strange fellow overturned such a heavy truck like a toy. And now, just within a fraction of second, he appeared in front of Lin Shiqing, almost very close to her body, that now she could even smell an odour of his mouth, which was extremely disgusting and almost made her puke.

Before she could get the time to get up and run, she was suddenly caught by him. Her slender white thighs were already grabbed by that strange person.

“Roar!”

He roared loudly, simultaneously he made an effort with his hands and lifted her whole body up, thereafter he quickly placed her in front of him,

as a shield.

This guy actually knew how to hold her as a hostage!

“Don’t shoot!”

Immediately Thunder ran over, his facial expression also immediately changed!

A hairy freak, who was already disabled, still had the power to smash the head of one of his team members into bits, like smashing watermelons. Although he was instantly killed by other members, but the death of his team member couldn’t be reversed, he couldn’t be brought back to life again.

At present, the situation was very risky, Lin Shiqing was already grabbed in a tight grip of one of the hairy freaks, and was being used as a hostage!

“Shiqing!”

Seeing the chaos caused by the sudden appearance of these strange fellows, Lin Detian was long thrown into a flustered state, but the moment his eyes fell on his daughter, he couldn’t bear it and his heart suddenly somewhat tightened.

As soon as these strange things came in front of his sight, he already understood the present situation and also guessed a number of possibilities. Not only that, he also secretly blamed himself for this carelessness. In case, something bad happened to Lin Shiqing here in front of his eyes, he would never forgive himself for this, and would always rebuke himself throughout his life.

At this moment, the heart of almost everyone present on the scene jumped to their throat. In this bafflement, they didn’t afford even blinking their eyes, they were just constantly, very fixedly staring at Lin Shiqing and that long-haired strange person.

“Hmm .....

They saw how Lin Shiqing was strangled by that hairy weirdo and was

lifted up in the midair. Because of that, she was feeling suffocated and was continuously struggling to release herself. However, all of her efforts went into vain. This strange fellow, who had the capability to overturn a truck, how could he be compared to a mere college-going girl?

“Everyone retreat.”

An eerie voice with a touch of haziness reverberated in all directions like a voice of ghosts and demons in general : “Otherwise, I will let you see a good play, TSK~! Such a soft skin and tender flesh young girl she is, my treasures would definitely love this toy very much, however, I don’t know she can withstand it or not.....”

“Who are you?”

Lin Detian heard the sound, and very calmly asked that.

Very proficiently, he tried to establish a peaceful interaction with the opposite party, since he was already afraid that in the absence of proper exchange of words between the bilateral parties, his daughter would have to ultimately suffer a lot.

“You don’t need to control anything, just do as I say!”

That gloomy voice burst out again, but this time, he shouted very loudly, immediately followed by a boorish move by that long-haired weirdo, he raised his hand to tear Lin Shiqing’s clothes apart from her body.

“Everyone draw back!”

The complexion of Thunder paled down , he didn’t wait for Lin Detian to react and immediately passed the ordered.

As a result, all the members of the National Security Agency present on the scene immediately complied with his order and retreated.

“TSK, also withdraw the troops who were assigned outside this place, in the outer ring, otherwise, my special play might begin immediately, and as for your knowledge, I always keep my promise .....

The hazy sound still continued passing on.

The big hand of that hairy freak actually didn't stop a bit, it was already just one centimetre away from the chest of Lin Shiqing, and it seemed that any moment her clothes would be ripped off.

The heart of each and everyone present on the scene, including Lin Detian, literally stopped beating, if anything happened to Lin Shiqing, then the consequences would be simply unimaginable!

What did he want to do? Could it be that in this kind of place, he wanted to defile her?

Extremely hateful!

Shua!

As when Lin Detian was about to order Lin Xiuwu, making him leave the place along with his group, exactly then, suddenly a golden light flashed right behind the head of that hairy weirdo.

Puff!

In a blink of an eye, the swift and fierce sword light cleft the hairy strange person from top to bottom into two parts. That golden light was incomparably bright, which dazzled the eyes of everyone.

This strange thing, who had the capability to overturn a truck, was so easily cleft into two halves merely by a sword!

Bang.

After getting hit by the sword, that freak loosened his hands and softly dropped Lin Shiqing. Although she fell, but in the hands of another figure, in the midair.

A split second was more than enough to change the table, however, the reaction speed of the people was not as fast as the occurrence of the incident. They quickly looked towards that direction with a rapt attention and saw a man, with a white grimace face mask, was standing in front of them, holding a golden sword in his hand.

The Masked man!

Surprisingly, this kind of dangerous situation took place, but still, they



didn't move!

However, this incident jolted the brain of both Lin Detian as well as Thunder, and they remained stunned for a while. They felt that the action they took beforehand was simply absurd.

The masked man was certainly Ye Feng.

Just when the truck was being overturned by that hairy freak, during that period, Ye Feng quickly held Su Menghan, and cast out Invisibility and Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace at the same time. After that, very quietly, along with her, he rushed to the distant place, where they couldn't be found by anyone.

Thereafter, in order to hide Su Menghan properly, he cast Camouflage Technique on her, to ensure that no other person could find any trace of her. Furthermore, he also exhorted her not to come out from this place at any cost.

Afterwards, by putting on a mask, he ran out and suddenly the scene appeared before his eyes, where Lin Shiqing was caught by that strange freak.

Quietly, he arrived behind the long-haired person, and started condensing Zhenqi in his Ancient Dragon Sword Ring. As a result, immediately the golden sword light flashed and sliced that weirdo into two halves.

After reaching ten years Cultivation, the colour of his Zhenqi sword actually turned into golden!

“Are you all right?”

Ye Feng looked at her, as he asked that in a sinking voice. He actually noticed that she had already suffocated long enough to pass out. However, fortunately, she still had retained a trace of consciousness, which let her know that she was saved by the masked man.

Her condition was so miserable, it wasn't just because that freak really made a huge effort to choke her neck badly, but also his smell was really intolerably disgusting. Luckily, Lin Shiqing could sustain it till now, and

didn't lose her consciousness.

“Thanks for .....

Lin Shiqing said that somewhat weakly.

“We have the common enemy.”

In a low voice, Ye Feng said that. One hundred meters of the range were already under the radar of his Soul Search Technique, but still, he didn't find any suspicious traces. That loud ghastly man's voice, which had appeared just a moment ago, was actually transmitted from very far away.

Was he one of the accomplices of Cai Shaohong?

Now Ye Feng could almost affirm that this abandoned factory was Cai Shaohong's secret place, where he used to hide his army of strange fellows. Moreover, he also believed that his other accomplices were also present here, at this moment.

“This person is our friend.”

Lin Detian throat somewhat dried up, seeing the masked man holding his daughter in his arms, he didn't dare to be negligent, and at once made a loud voice : “Excuse me, may I ask .....

Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh!

At this moment, Ye Feng suddenly reacted, since he sensed something strange appeared in the scope of his Soul Search Technique. Soon a figure flashed under the dim light of night, immediately followed by three sharp flying knives. These hidden weapons were thrown directly towards Lin Detian.

“Are they targeting Lin Clan? Also, the hidden weapon was played pretty well.”

Ye Feng sneered, instantly he loosened his grip and let Lin Shiqing fell to the ground. Thenafter, he promptly made a stance, it was Dragon Claw Hand Technique! In a flash, his Zhenqi sprang out spatially from his body, and by coordinating Soul Search Technique, he easily captured the

trajectory of those three sharp flying knives.

Shua. Shua. Shua.

With his one hand, he pulled all the three hidden weapons and totally nullified this sneak attack in a tweak. If Ye Wentian would have seen him doing so, he must have exclaimed aloud and would have branded him as a genius, since he was able to apply a second layer of Dragon Claw Hand in this way!

## Chapter 127 - Zhui Hun, The Armed Escort

---

The incident was so sudden which left everyone, including Thunder and Lin Detian stunned for a moment. They actually couldn't even react, only heard the sound of three hidden weapons fell to the ground.

“What just happened?”

Even though they had night vision device, but still they totally failed to catch these flying hidden weapons in the darkness, whose speed was equal to the speed of a bullet in general. However, if it were not Ye Feng, who had made a prompt move and got rid of them, then the life of Lin Detian should be considered as done for, since these hidden weapons had certainly targeted his life.

Until the landing sound of these weapons echoed everywhere, Thunder and the remaining NSA soldiers couldn't even notice a thing. After that sound, they looked down through their night vision devices and saw few weapons lying on the ground, around Lin Detian's feet, which immediately brought a huge change in their complexion.

Someone wanted to assassinate Lin Detian!

Although, the remaining 29 NSA soldiers didn't get any direct order from Thunder, but still, they instantaneously ran up to the side of Lin Detian at the same time and surrounded him tightly. Meanwhile, they also withdrew their various kinds of precision equipment, and thus by this way they immediately entered the highest garrison state.

Soon, a high-altitude flashlight bomb shot, which lit the surrounding several kilometres of area up in a flash. Now, it could be clearly seen that the area, almost a kilometre away from the factory, was extremely shabby and had totally deteriorated, the entire periphery was also piled up with tall overgrown weeds.

In addition, those eight hairy freaks had been shot and slain, and their

corpses were sprawled on the ground, accompanied by two overturned military trucks, which were also in a huge mess, with several parts scattered everywhere.

While on the other side, intelligently, by taking advantage of this light, Lin Detian lowered his head and as soon as he saw three sharp knives lying around his feet, he gawked.

“The armed escort, Zhui Hun?”

Actually, he recognised the identity of the opposite party at once!

“Chief, did you recognize him?”

Thunder’s complexion suddenly dignified : “I had heard around five years ago, there was a man, named Zhui Hun, who was known as the great armed escort, was a cut-throat killer of this arena, and had a very special expertise in killing people while being invisible. Later on, especially, he was listed by the government as the most wanted criminal, however, ever since that announcement, he vanished without leaving any trace .....

“Correct, I had never thought he would unexpectedly appear at a place like this.”

Lin Detian frowned as he said that, then he raised his head and looked ahead around twenty meters away where Ye Feng was. This young masked man had such a terrific capability to stop the sneak attack of that armed escort, and on top of that, in the midair, and that also quite easily, his martial arts skill was indeed remarkable!

The armed escort, Zhui Hun?

At this moment, Ye Feng’s Soul Search Technique was still active, therefore, he easily heard the conversation between Lin Detian and Thunder, from quite afar. Now he was aware that this time, the enemy was the master of hidden weapon, and was also the most wanted criminal. Apparently, he must be one the puppets of Cai Shaohong.

Cai Shaohong must have known this armed escort from quite a long time, and most probably, he would have relied on him at the time of the

extermination of Southern Heavenly Gate. As a profound cultivator and the great master of the hidden weapon technique, exterminating a gang of the secular world, wouldn't have been a big deal for him.

Holding a long golden sword, Ye Feng was looking around, all alert from the surrounding, so that if any suspicious character would enter his 100 meters of range, he would immediately act!

Moreover, just a moment ago, Lin Shiqing, who was thrown on the ground by him, got hurt in her buttocks, and as a reflex action, she couldn't endure but lightly produce a "hissing" sound.

However, she was not that kind of pampered and spoiled young lady. She recovered at once, by propping her hands against the ground, she stood up, but her captivating silhouette appeared somewhat weak. Immediately she threw her glances all around, and shouted out: "Where is Xiao Qi?"

She had already caught her breath by now, and at this moment, a thought hit her mind all of a sudden. Her best friend Xiao Qi, wasn't she brought here, then she would be certainly in danger, right?

Seeing his father, Lin Detian was almost assassinated, her heart was already hopping crazily, so how couldn't she think of Xiao Qi, who was already going through lots of sufferings? If it were not that nearby standing masked man who rescued her, she would certainly have also suffered a mishap.

Quietly, she looked at Ye Feng who was standing nearby, holding a long golden sword, and she thought that having this kind of courageous masked man around could really render a very strong sense of security.

Who exactly was he after all?

Why did he wear a face mask?

She was really ashamed of herself for completely misunderstanding him before.....

"Jee Jee."

Zhui Hun's gloomy voice echoed in all directions, like a ghost : "Where is that young lady of Xiao Clan, shouldn't you ask this from the person who is standing next to you, Miss Lin?"

As soon as she heard his words, she turned her head and looked sideways towards Ye Feng, her beautiful facial cast at once got infected with a hint of doubt.

Without waiting for the people to respond, he continued saying hazily : "Mo Jiuge, indeed your stratagem and strategy are worth praising, who could have thought that you have been planning this for quite a long. However, in the end, you betrayed Miss Long, didn't you? Now, your new plan is to take hold of this young lady of Lin Clan, right? Pretty good, Jie Jie, whether it is martial arts world or common world, you want to be on the top in both areas, by reaching the highest power point, which is just round the corner ....."

These words fell and all of a sudden gave a powerful shock to everyone present on the scene.

Subconsciously, Lin Shiqing drew back a few steps, simultaneously, somewhat alarmed, she gazed at Ye Feng with a bit of bewildered expression. However, not very far away, Lin Detian, Thunder and all the soldiers of the NSA suddenly buckled up, their spirit also rose up all at once, even more than before.

Could it be that this masked man and that armed escort were fellow accomplices?

It seemed that everything was already vividly explained!

Killing Cai Shaohong? Destruction of evidence? And currently, at this moment, he appeared to rescue Lin Shiqing, didn't he?

No matter what Cai Shaohong had done here in this country, at present, the goal of this masked man was crystal clear: Approaching Lin Clan! Hearing the rumour that Cai Shaohong was Lin Shiqing's beloved, this kind of hindrance for the ambitious masked man, Mo Jiuge, was certainly very baffling, so naturally wouldn't he try all means to get rid of him?

However, no one could see that under the white grimace face mask, Ye Feng was also little disturbed and suddenly frowned.

It was obvious enough that Zhui Hun's words had instantly implanted the conflicting views in the minds of everyone and had also distracted their focal point, making the attention of everyone including Lin Detian shift from him to Ye Feng. It was an undisguised trap, and he also turned out very successful in establishing it!

However, this guy, how could he know the relationship between Ye Feng and Long Wan'er? Could it be that this guy had seen Li Hua of Heavenly Sword Palace before?

Since it was totally impossible for Long Clan to publicise this matter outside. Besides, his relationship with Long Wan'er, it was also known to Ye Wentian, but it was highly unlikely that he would leak this matter out. Hence, it could only be inferred that this matter had spread only from the mouth of that crazy and perverted man, Li Hua. It seemed that soon the whole martial arts world would know this matter .....

Naturally, this thing didn't matter to Ye Feng at all, as he could see that it was the identity of Mo Jiuge which was misunderstood here. At present, the vital matter of this moment was he must find and kill Zhui Hun, otherwise keeping such a profound hidden weapon master, lurking around in the shadows, would definitely let people have sleepless nights.

“Cut the crap.”

In a lower voice he said that and hurriedly grabbed Lin Shiqing standing nearby him. Then he looked ahead towards Thunder and Lin Detian : “Don't move heedlessly, just ensure your safety, that would be pretty enough.”

Ye Feng was disinclined to explain anything, just uttered two or three sentences which were also inexplicable. He believed that as one of the senior officials of the country, Lin Detian would have understood by now that what he was supposed to do in this situation.

“Remain on standby, and stay alert all the time!”



Indeed as expected, Lin Detian was very an experienced and attentive person, therefore, without further ado, he promptly issued an order. Even though he saw his daughter, Lin Shiqing was captured by Ye Feng right before his eyes, but still, he maintained a calm face, without letting any disturbing thoughts take over his mind. Whatever the goal of this masked man was, at least for now, he was on the same side where they all were.

And the current situation was their opponent Zhui Hun was hiding somewhere in a secret place!

Meanwhile, Lin Shiqing, whose arm was tightly held by Ye Feng, also started struggling : “You let me go!”

Afterall, she was young, her temperament wasn't as calm as her father, Lin Detian.

“Less wordy.”

Naturally, Ye Feng had grabbed her, as he wanted to use her as a hostage, so as to avoid the attack of any advanced hidden equipment of the NSA soldiers, which could make him incautiously meet with a disaster.

He slipped his hand around her soft slender waist, and immediately his Zhenqi started moving under his foot, and the next moment, Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace was cast out.

Since it seemed that Zhui Hun wouldn't show up on his own, therefore now, Ye Feng really needed to act on his own initiative, to track him down. He already had Soul Search Technique in his command which was equal to having the precision radar of hundred meters of range. As soon as the opposite party entered his hundred meters scope, he could never escape from his keen sensation.

Holding her body, all of a sudden Ye Feng's stature vanished right in front of everyone, just like a ghost in the night sky.

“Over there!”

Hastily, Ye Feng dashed towards the direction of the factory, by

depending upon his Soul Search Technique, instantaneously he sensed the presence of a person hiding in the thick bushes, besides, his position was quite covert. Undoubtedly he was Zhui Hun!

## Chapter 128 - Factory Explosion

---

Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh!

Ye Feng had barely approached that covert place, but immediately sensed the presence of a person's silhouette hiding in the dense bushes. However, incisively, back to back, three flying sharp knives were fired towards his face, making him a little surprised. A surprise attack!

Shua! Shua! Shua!

Promptly, his long golden sword brandished in his hand, by relying on his Soul Search Technique, instantly, very precisely, he hit those flying knives and nullified that sneak attack. After that, he raised his head, looked ahead, and saw that the person's shadow was setting out to escape.

The armed escort, Zhui Hun had been terrorising the whole world for so many years, furthermore, his primary cultivation skill was Hidden Weapon Technique. And as a trivial result of his practice, his agility had already reached a high degree of proficiency to the extent where even after displaying Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace, Ye Feng turned out totally incompetent to catch up with him.

Instantaneously, that figure sprang a dozen meters towards the direction of the abandoned factory, just like a crafty fox in the night.

“Does he want to run away?”

Without further ado, Ye Feng once again abandoned Lin Shiqing and promptly released Dragon Claw Hand!

In a short while, his Zhenqi sprang out from his body and fled towards Zhui Hun's direction, like a virtual Dragon Claw. Soon, it grabbed his shoulders and waist firmly and started pulling him back.

However, unfortunately, the opposite part was already well prepared,

after all, he must have seen Ye Feng's Dragon Claw Hand Technique a moment ago, when Ye Feng had tried to block those flying knives advancing towards Lin Detian

At this critical moment, suddenly that shadow's inner qi burst out, making his stature turn at once, and very smoothly, he slipped out of the clutch of Ye Feng's Dragon Claw Hand. Now, Ye Feng could feel that this person had definitely more than two decades Cultivation, might be even up to thirty years!

Zhui Hun had been moving across the country for last five years, and had also handled plenty of ruthless and pungent affairs. Moreover, he was listed as the most wanted criminal by the government, naturally, his Cultivation was beyond one's imagination.

If Ye Feng hadn't possessed ten years Cultivation at present, he would never have dared to pursue him rashly.

"My Cultivation is still extremely low, or else I would have solely relied on Dragon Claw Hand Technique and would definitely have stopped him from running away ....."

Seeing the opposite party still running away, Ye Feng didn't hesitate and again held Lin Shiqing as a hostage. While embracing her soft and delicate body in his arms, he hastily cast out Invisibility and Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace at the same time!

As for Lin Shiqing, since she was once again thrown by him, which made her heart already very annoyed, but she couldn't flare up at this moment. Her beautiful face turned red, as she thought that how shameless this masked man was, although he was pursuing that armed escort, but why did he still bend on having her as a hostage?

She also felt that in this chaotic situation, her whole body was constantly being taken advantage by this masked man over and over again. The thing not ended here, because of him, every now and then, the weeds were slapping on her smooth face and exposed thighs, making her strongly feel that tonight was really one of the worst nights ever since her birth.

As for Ye Feng, it had become a necessity for him to take her as a hostage, just to ensure his safety. Because he couldn't guarantee that whether it was Lin Detian or Thunder, ever since they had listened to Zhui Hun's words, they would trust him or not.

Also, the NSA soldiers, who were capable enough to deal with a martial artist, would definitely have some hidden means with them right now, therefore Ye Feng had to ensure his security by all means. He thought that using her as a hostage would demotivate them and would also prevent them from acting rashly.

Carrying Lin Shiqing in his arms, his stature vanished, and with a breakneck speed, he rushed behind him to chase him down. The more he got closer to the abandoned factory, the more he turned cautious, like not to touch any weeds or wildflowers, also not to produce any sound of the footsteps.

The dark shadow of Zhui Hun escaped all the way towards the door of the factory and hid behind the edge or the half-collapsed wall. But he was still cautious, since he had abundant of bubbling doubts going on in his heart right now.

Where did that masked man disappear?

Had he given up?

Sneakingly, he stuck his head out to see outside the factory. Under the dim light of the night sky, the towering dense weeds were billowing in the wind. However, neither he noticed any trace of a person's shadow, nor heard any suspicious sound.

But somehow, he always felt a chill in the air invading his whole body, making him still maintain the vigilance.

He had a huge trust on his instinct, and on that basis, he felt that he was still in danger!

"Hmm, I am a proficient Cultivator with three decades Cultivation, but still am I afraid of him, a fledgeling little guy?"

He felt a little funny, but the fact was, indeed the talent of the masked

man, Mo Jiuge was extremely formidable and frightful, which was at a whole new level. He had already heard a lot of things about the masked man, like he was a young guy, but could still assign his inner qi away from his body spatially, and could also display the second layer of Dragon Claw Hand Technique very easily, like a genius.

Zhui Hun thought that in case he had to deal with this masked man face to face, then, in that case, his odds of success were emphatically not high. His area of expertise was literally assassinating people while being in the shadow, if he couldn't make a proper utilisation of his agility, then the situation would definitely turn out very unfavourable for him.

“It appears that nobody is chasing me.”

He waited for a moment, and when he saw that no movement took place outside, he felt a little relieved and thought: “Based on my skill, escaping from here won't be a problem for me. Since the assassination of Lin Detian has failed because of that guy, I can't stay here any longer.....”

He stretched his hand towards that semi-collapsed walls and dug some mud for a while, shortly after he pulled a sophisticated remote control out. By holding it in his hand, he finally made up his mind that he had to escape from here as soon as possible.

But right at this moment, a faint voice suddenly resounded in his ear.

“Do you really want to escape? But it's too late now.”

Zhui Hun felt a surge of terrible pain on his thigh like something had been pierced there!

“Shua!”

And the next moment, a blood-curdling screech echoed everywhere but again he turned gloomy, bowed his head, looked towards his wound, and remained surprised for a moment by seeing a golden sword, which attacked him from behind, had actually stabbed his thigh at one fell swoop, and had caused a deep wound there, making his blood rush out crazily

This sneak attack was certainly done by Ye Feng, he came all the way while being invisible and abruptly pierced his sword to cripple the agility of the opposite party.

At present, it had become absolutely impossible for Zhui Hun to flee from here. In the martial arts world, regardless of what kind of dodging agility one possessed, he still had to completely rely on his both legs. The current situation was, his one leg was injured, so how could he still run?

Ye Feng moved closer to him, and carefully observed him for a moment, dressed in skin-tight black clothes, Zhui Hun's stature appeared very thin, his face was covered with a black hood, like a bank robber, and his eyes were very gloomy, resembling a ferocious wolf.

"This remote control, is it used to control these strange people?"

All of a sudden, a sophisticated remote control, which was in Zhui Hun's hands, popped up in Ye Feng's eyes. It was a silvery metal thing, and just by looking at it, anyone could say that it was a high-tech product. But the point was, it seemed that it wasn't the same gadget which was there in Cai Shaohong's basement?

"Wrong, this is the remote control of a bomb!"

Was held under duress by Ye Feng in his bosom, Lin Shiqing looked at that thing and responded right away.

"Bomb?"

Ye Feng's face turned pale.

"Indeed Miss Lin is very acumen, as she instantly figured this thing out."

Half-knelt on the ground, Zhui Hun continued saying in an eerie voice : "What a pity, since I have been caught by you, I don't want to protect my crappy and rotten life anymore."

His voice barely fell, and Ye Feng saw his hand moved and pressed a red button on the remote control.

"Not good!"

Immediately Ye Feng responded, and while putting his golden sword away, he quickly embraced Lin Shiqing, as he wanted to quickly leave this abandoned factory.

Unfortunately, the opposite party had not only planted bombs in the abandoned factory but had also buried several bombs in the weeds around the factory. As soon as Zhui Hun pressed a button, all the hundreds of bombs got activated at once.

Suddenly, with the loud bang, the flame soared to the heaven!

In this deathly stillness, outside Yanjing city, at such a desolate place, something happened which changed the whole scenario. In a twinkling of an eye, the entire abandoned factory along with its surrounding hundred meters of area, instantly turned into a sea of fire.

“It’s not good, Chief!”

Thunder, who was leading everyone to go forward cautiously, saw a terrible surge of flame in front of him, not very far away from his members, and immediately his complexion changed.

While on the other side, Lin Detian’s complexion also ashen.

The NSA soldiers, based on their search, had figured out that the masked man along with Lin Shiqing had rushed towards the factory. Who would have thought that just in a split second, the entire factory would explode?

Seeing the explosion of this scale, Lin Detian didn’t dare to continue moving on.

Therein, the possibility of Lin Shiqing’s survival had become almost zero now!



## Chapter 129 - Capture The Masked Man Alive!

---

All of a sudden, Ye Feng's heart skipped a beat and instantly he proliferated his Soul Search Technique, as he saw Zhui Hun's hand pressing the red button.

Soul Search Technique was not only used to observe the surrounding situation within a range, but also to examine the underground situation as well. But, in normal times, there was no need to do that, since it used to heavily consume his Zhenqi.

However now, Ye Feng would certainly not think much.

Because of the proliferation of Soul Search Technique, he immediately found out that several bombs were buried under the ground, around this place. Fortunately, he didn't sense any bomb under his feet. In such a short time, it was impossible to destroy all these bombs, his mind immediately started racing with a lightning speed, and the first thought which crossed his mind was the protection of Lin Shiqing. Therefore, he tightly squeezed her body in his arms, simultaneously waved his long golden sword a few times.

Shua! Shua!

A mere sword gashed opened the ground, which was immediately followed by a sudden eruption of his Zhenqi, causing a terrible airwave, which raised a big layer of mud land!

Without further delay, Ye Feng put away his long sword and pushed Lin Shiqing down directly on the ground, and then he also jumped onto her. Immediately after, a big layer of mud, which was brought about by him, fell down and deeply buried those two people together underground.

This time, Ye Feng had to ensure her safety at all cost, it wasn't because she was Miss Lin, the daughter of the great Clan, but because she was an innocent person. Therefore, Ye Feng would never allow himself to just

watch her helplessly dying like this.

“Ahh.....”

Since she was thrown on the ground and her body was pressed down by Ye Feng, she exhaled a sound out of pain, however, a thick layer of mud had already covered them up, therefore her voice completely got concealed.

Bang!

The sound of a series of bombs detonation burst out, even if they were buried by the thick mud, but Ye Feng could still feel that the ambient temperature suddenly rose up.

“Don’t flail about.”

In the meantime, Ye Feng also felt that Lin Shiqing was constantly struggling, therefore he hugged her more tightly, and pressed her heavily under his body.

There was a five-centimetre-thick layer of soil covering their body, but this couldn’t 100 % ensure their safety. Might be, there would be some bombs buried around them, already there were altogether more than hundreds of bombs buried everywhere, and if they all exploded together, then not even a shield of five-centimetre-thick soil layer could block the collective power of the explosion.

The fire was already soaring to the sky, making the surrounding more prone to danger. Unfortunately, just in a moment, the layer of that soil was lifted up, making almost half of the back of Ye Feng bare and soon got exposed to the fire.

Bang!

Out of the blue, one solid steel bar, which was actually sent flying by this explosion and was already burning red in this intense flame, suddenly flew straight towards the place where Ye Feng was.

If by any chance, this steel bar would stab Ye Feng’s back, then definitely not even Lin Shiqing, who was pressed beneath him, would be

able to escape this blow.

Bang!

However, again at such a critical time, Ye Feng relied on his Soul Search Technique and instantly sensed this flying steel bar which was advancing towards him. Hence, without turning his head, he simply stretched his hand out to grab this burning steel bar and then threw it aside.

Immediately with a loud bang, it got crashed in the semi-collapsed wall, making it suddenly collapse to the ground, while all the broken bricks and tiles caused by that crash, actually rained on Ye Feng's body.

They were surrounded by a huge chaotic situation, but still Ye Feng was stubbornly lying on the ground pressing her under his body. However, at this moment, he suddenly felt a burning pain in his legs and back, but he couldn't do anything rightnow except endurance.

Fortunately, there was no buried bomb under their feet, or else they would have been dead by now.

As for that armed escort, his leg was already stabbed and badly injured by Ye Feng, but still, he tried to escape. He merely ran two steps, and suddenly got submerged in a sheet of flame, his whole body instantly caught fire, and he fell to the ground heavily. Soon, the fire turned him into a grilled armed escort.

“Hey.....”

Since Lin Shiqing's body was tightly pressed under Ye Feng's body, therefore she felt a little pain in her chest. Also, why wouldn't she feel this pain, a pair of her beautiful front was quite majestic, and at this time since they were being pressed firmly by Ye Feng, then how couldn't they be in pain?

She could clearly feel how desperately Ye Feng was trying to protect her, however, the present situation was.....

“Hey, your back has caught fire!”

Lin Shiqing was struggling desperately, however, her efforts were of no use, since the strength of Ye Feng was incredibly huge, how easily he sliced that strange person in two halves, a few minutes ago!

“Don’t move.”

Ye Feng said in a sinking voice, since she was bothering him a lot, and he clearly knew that her struggling wouldn’t do any good for them. If they would jump out then definitely would be burnt to ashes. As for him, since he was an Immortal Cultivator, he had a certain immunity to the ordinary flame, although he would be burnt, but somehow he wouldn’t be burnt to death.

On the one hand, the flames were rapidly spreading, while on the other hand, Lin Shiqing was in a very terrible condition, being heavily pressed by Ye Feng, making her more and more suffocated. And quite soon, sweat started oozing from her fair and smooth face.

Hot!

However, Ye feng just looked into her eyes, while still maintaining complete silence, even though his back had caught fire and he had been in a severe pain, but he didn’t panic.

But as for her, she simply couldn’t dare to imagine that if it were not Ye Feng who had protected her like this, then in what kind of situation would she have been now? The same thing must have happened with that armed escort, Zhui Hun, he would have definitely burnt to crisp by now.

The pain and sufferings of being burnt alive, this mere thought had already shudder her heart from inside. Currently, in front of her, this masked man was not only desperately trying to block the flame approaching her, but had also caught fire and his back was burning badly. And here the stunning point was he still didn’t let her suffer the slightest bit .....

“Although I can’t see his expression, but he would certainly be in a severe pain, wouldn’t he?”

At this moment, Lin Shiqing's beautiful pupils were already completely occupied by his white grimace face mask.

It just took a few minutes, and his entire back flared up and completely turned him into a Burning Man!

Bang! Bang!

But, at this moment, the sound of two ammunition explosion passed from the sky, immediately followed by a burst of rainwater, which was actually falling down from the sky. Now, they could feel even from the underground place, that after a few minutes the surrounding fire intensity had started gradually weakening, and finally, only little-scattered flames left.

As the member of the National Security Agency, they had to carry rainfall bomb at all times!

As one of the top fighting force of China, the equipment of the members of the NSA was absolutely top-grade. Under this kind of situation, they finally made use of their equipment, which really turned out very successful. The flame that Ye Feng had carried on the back from quite a long time, was finally extinguished by the pouring caused by the rainfall bomb.

Otherwise, if the fire had continued to go on like this, then it could be assumed that even Ye Feng would have been burnt badly, and barely survived.

“Miss Lin!”

Along with his team members, Thunder rushed towards that direction while shouting loudly. Meanwhile, the fire fighting guns were also being used by them to speedily extinguish the peripheral remaining flames.

Sooner, the NSA members found the corpse of Zhu Hun, who was burnt to ashes. However, this scene instantly made their hearts sank. If such a proficient martial artist Zhui Hun, who had 30 years Cultivation, failed to escape this explosion and was burnt to death, then was there any possibility that Lin Shiqing would still be alive?

Everyone was stunned and their hearts were also overshadowed!

“How is it?”

After the confirmation that there was no danger now, burning with impatience Lin Detian ran up to Thunder and immediately inquired.

“The situation is far from good, since the explosion is very violent, and Miss Lin had been seen in this area, therefore the possibility that she would have luckily escaped, is extremely low.”

Thunder said by keeping his voice down.

But the voice just fell, and one of the members of NSA shouted out loudly : “Captain, Chief, over there, someone is on the hoof!”

As soon as he said this sentence, instantly the eyes of everyone shifted towards the said direction, where they saw a big pile of bricks and roof tiles. However, immediately after, they again saw a masked figure crawled up, he was the masked man, Ye Feng.

The moment Lin Detian saw him, his blood rushed to his head and his fury suddenly tore his mind apart. If the masked man had shown up here, then didn't it mean Lin Shiqing was also brought here by him? Perhaps, this masked man was lucky enough, as he survived this terrible explosion, but Lin Shiqing .....

“Catch him alive!”

Without any hesitation, Lin Detian issued the order!

Puff! Puff!

Two unknown strange bullets were almost immediately shot out from the muzzles of the two NSA soldiers.

It seemed like since the masked man had just gone through a massive explosion, therefore he was unable to respond and was shot back to back twice, by two bullets, one on his shoulder and other on his chest. Originally, he wanted to stand up and escape, however, he failed, as he was jolted by those two shots, and soon his all strength was suddenly dropped down to the ground.

Capturing the masked man alive, succeeded!

Thunder waved his hand, leading the several members of the National Security Agency to rush towards the masked man.

## Chapter 130 - Mask Uncovered!

---

Ye Feng felt that carrying on his back, the intense fire had finally got extinguished, which gave him a huge relief. However, without paying much attention towards Lin Shiqing, who was still pressed under his body, he raised his head and shrugged all the broken pieces of bricks and tiles off from his back, and then stuck his head out.

Without looking back, he got the idea who the person was, as he already knew that he was Thunder, advancing towards him, along with his people. Although, without a bit of hesitation, he wanted to use his skills to immediately depart from this place, but at this time, the only thing running in his mind was a feeling of a deep pain in his shoulder and chest.

Actually, he had been shot!

For a moment, Ye Feng's heart was petrified, as he felt that those two bullets had some kind of strange force, which immediately spread throughout his body and pinned down his Zhenqi terrifically.

“His Cultivation was half-suppressed!”

His Cultivation had been shackled for the time being and it had dropped to a five-years of degree. Therefore, originally he wanted to cast Invisibility, but now it had become next to impossible. Fortunately what he had was Zhenqi, if he were an ordinary martial artist with inner qi inside, then as soon as these bullets entered his body, the whole internal forces running within his body immediately failed to respond.

Without thinking much, he struggled to emerge out of the debris. But he failed to grab the chance to leave, since the moment he set his foot out, he was pressed down from his shoulders by the members of the NSA, and immediately the precision rifles were pointed at his head.

“Don't move!”



Standing ten meters away, Thunder pulled out a pistol and also pointed at his head.

Just a moment ago, he had gone through such a violent explosion and had also suffered a heavy injury. Immediately after that, he didn't even get the time to breathe and was immediately shot twice. Therefore, for the time being, he didn't have the ability to resist. He could only raise his head and looked at Thunder and Lin Detian, coldly.

“Where is my daughter?”

Lin Detian walked to the side where Thunder was, and looked at Ye Feng, when he saw a severely burnt injury on his back and his tattered black cloth, his complexion darkened at once.

Although this guy survived this fierce explosion, but could it be because he was buried in a huge pile of bricks and stones at that time? Everything was burnt, then Lin Shiqing .....

“Dad ..... cough...Keke .....

Right at this moment, a faint sound passed from that debris, followed by a white arm stretched out reluctantly, which looked very smooth and exquisite, without any burnt marks, but just had got tainted with some mud.

“Shiqing!”

“Miss Lin!”

Immediately a pleased expression crawled over the faces of a group of people, not only that, Lin Detian's anger instantly changed into joy. Hurriedly people ran towards her, and pulled her up since she was still buried in the huge pile of crushed bricks and stones.

“Keke, Keke .....

She was coughing constantly, although was neither burnt nor wounded as she was shielded by Ye Feng, but still she was in discomfort because her chest had been heavily pressed by him and fumigation had also made her suffocate all along.

By this time, she had been finally pulled out. After coughing several times and taking several deep breaths, her condition gradually improved.

“How are you now?”

Lin Detian supported her, as he asked anxiously.

“No, it’s nothing ..... he?”

She shook her head and wiped the oozing sweat from her forehead, as she swept her eyes around the place, and soon noticed that the NSA members had already fallen upon Ye Feng.

“Did you get hurt, go back to the hospital first, here I have your uncle Thunder, who will go along with you.”

Lin Detian said that, as he greeted two National Security members, because he wanted to make them see her daughter off to the hospital first.

“There is no need to do that, I’m all right.”

Lin Shiqing firmly replied, then set out and arrived in front of Ye Feng. While standing still, she looked at him, her beautiful eyes glittered with a complex look, like a starry sky : “No matter who you are, thank you for protecting me, but this can’t become the strong reason for us to let you leave peacefully. ”

Surprisingly, this masked man had protected her, but afterall, wasn’t she taken away by him to the abandoned factory? Besides, this masked man was the pivotal character of this incident, therefore he must be strictly taken under control.

Was this masked man really friends with Ye Feng? Did he already have the relationship with Miss Long, who belonged to the aristocratic Clan of the martial arts world? Still, he wanted to get close to Lin Shiqing, and acquire her favourable impression, so that later on, he could take the control of her entire Clan under his clutch, like boarding the pinnacle of power?

His ambition was truly big.

Although whatever Zhui Hun had said wasn't true at all, but if one would think logically, then would feel that this possibility was on higher side. Speaking of which, even if there would just be a little possibility of this story, still, Lin Clan could never take a risk and release him easily.

“Inform Xiuwu to make a wide scope search throughout this exploded area, and if he marks anything suspicious, then must immediately report me.”

After issuing this order, he arrived at the side of Lin Shiqing, with his heart overflowing with some doubts.

Had the masked man really saved her daughter?

He glanced at the heap of debris from where these two people crawled out and immediately understood the whole situation, which forced him to admit the fact that this masked guy was still a little manly.

“Thank you for saving my daughter.”

He said that and instantly his thread of conversation took a sudden revolution : “But if you really want to get close to my Clan to fulfil your ulterior motives, then you are gravely mistaken. As of now, just follow us, the truth will be thoroughly investigated, and if you turn up innocent, then I assure you that we never tarnish a genuine person. ”

These words, whether they were said to comfort Ye Feng, or he really meant it, nobody could figure it out. However, he was not so stupid afterall. It seemed that even though he heard whatever said by Zhu Hun, but still treated his words as a possibility. He only had some doubts, since he couldn't bring himself to believe it thoroughly.

Ye Feng heard his statement and his thought process instantly changed the direction, by lowering his voice, he said : “We just have a common enemy. Now the evil person has already died, and since I fall into your hands, apparently it will be very difficult for me to escape.”

“I know fairly well.”

Lin Detian nodded his head to express that he was truly very satisfied with Ye Feng's understanding, he then continued : “First give him two

shots again, then send him to the hospital.”

These words fell, and in a flash, changed the colour of Ye Feng’s face, this person Lin Detian, he was really handling this affair cautiously, very intelligently. Although Ye Feng was already under their clutch, but still was it really needed to shot him twice again? Ye Feng was actually counting on his strength, which would restore soon, then he could go back and pick Su Menghan up, but now it looked like he must have to draw some other plans.

Puff! puff!

Once again, the same kind of two bullets were fired, which were instantaneously shot on his arm. This kind of bullet had been especially designed to paralyze the meridian points, so that it could temporarily suppress one’s Cultivation. After entering the human body, it used to melt and become some kind of strange energy to put down one’s power. Besides making the people of martial arts world totally unable to resist, it didn’t have any other side effects.

At present, he didn’t have the strength left to dodge those bullets, as for now, he could only allow himself to be trampled upon. In a flash, his Cultivation was suppressed and dropped to three years all of a sudden. However, the story not ended here, soon he felt that now he needed a rest of whole night to restore .....

“Excellent.”

Lin Detian said that and then walked away with Thunder, while discussing with him something in a whispering tone: “Four bullets have been shot and what I think is they would be more than enough to suppress his inner qi for at least one week, this way he can’t become a threat to us. For now, you carefully search the vicinity and try to find out any suspicious thing, which can be used as the evidence, as you already know that Cai Shaohong’s death has become an international issue, therefore we must give a proper explanation to it. ”

“Alright.”

Thunder nodded and quickly began to arrange his subordinates, to

coordinate with Lin Xiuwu's Fourth Guards Regiment soldiers, in their thorough search.

Meanwhile, Lin Detian also nodded, as he felt that a big stone, which was stuck in his heart, had finally fallen to the ground, so long as Lin Shiqing was all right, other things were just like the floating clouds.

Although Ye Feng's Cultivation had been suppressed, but whatever might be the reason, his Soul Search Technique was still active, and with the help of which, he was listening to the whispered conversation of those two men, and thought that the Immortal Cultivator couldn't be compared with an ordinary martial artist. And as a proof, even though four bullets were shot at him by the specially designed guns, but they couldn't have any huge effect on him.

Usually, a martial artist took almost a week to restore his depleted inner qi again. But in his case, it was his Zhenqi which had been suppressed, so he could easily restore it within a night, this was the huge disparity.

While he was occupied by his own thoughts, he felt a sweet fragrance greeted his nostrils all of a sudden, and as a reflex action, he immediately raised his head and a pretty face of Lin Shiqing appeared before his eyes.

"Why don't you go to the hospital first? Your injury is not minor."

Her lips slightly moved, and a crisp voice resounded, apparently there was a visible hint of concerns peeping out from her eyes.

"Hang on, take off his mask first."

Right at this moment, suddenly Lin Detian's voice burst out, as he cautiously said : "We must see who he really is before sending him to the hospital, it won't take lots of time."

Ye Feng heard that, and his heart shivered with his sudden statement.

Now he had only three years Cultivation, so in order to get away from here, he at least needed a rest of few hours to get the job done! Literally speaking, for the next few hours, he had to go through lots of sufferings.

A member of the NSA pulled his mask conveniently and uncovered his white grimace face mask.

Instantly, all the surrounding people, who were already making guesses regarding his face from quite a long time, gawked as soon as his true appearance appeared in front of their eyes.

## Chapter 131 - Xiao Qi Shows Up

---

Once the white grimace face mask was taken off, the face appeared in front of them, made everyone present on the scene gawk for a moment.

Very Ugly!

Just a glance was enough, and anyone could say that his facial features were almost similar to a pig, one eye was gigantic while the other was quite small, not only this, they were quite afar from each other, which made them look extremely wretched and dreadful. The things not ended here, the bridge of his nose was caved in, however, the nostril was upwards in the air, making his nose hairs visibly clear. Furthermore, his mouth was also of enormous size, and the two rows of his teeth were black and yellow in colour, merely looking at them could make any person puke on the spot.

The people present on the spot could easily dare to pledge that there couldn't be anyone in this world who could be uglier than him!

This world could actually have this much uglier person!

The gorgeous black eyebrows of Lin Shiqing immediately wrinkled, even though she usually didn't judge people solely by their appearances, however at present, she really couldn't withstand seeing his disordered facial features. His appearance was indeed way too shocking.

Meanwhile, Ye Feng also observed the expressions their eyes reflected, and secretly chuckled in his heart, could they understand his Camouflage? Indeed as expected, he changed his appearance into Mo Jiuge's, which all of a sudden made everyone dumbfounded including Lin Detian. Regarding this strategy, Ye Feng hadn't planned earlier to use Mo Jiuge's appearance when he would be trapped in such a critical, because once he used this appearance than wouldn't he be forced to appear with the same face before Long Wan'er .....

“Ahem, well, take him to the hospital first.”

Without further ado, Lin Detian beckoned with his hand, also there was a touch of embarrassment in his tone.

Even he also thought that the reason why this man always wore a mask was because he wanted to hide his identity, however, had never expected that it would be just to cover up his ugliness. Indeed, there was nothing wrong in having an awfully ugly face, but it was also not right to scare people with such a face, no wonder he developed the habit of wearing a mask.

Unless he chose to get plastic surgery done in order to fix his face, or else Lin Detian really thought that not a single girl would ever fall for him. However, with this pair of countenance, even if he would go for plastic surgery, he might baffle a group of plastic surgeons for sure .....

But the bewildering point was, in the martial arts world, did Miss Long have seen his face and already knew how he really looked like?

Lin Detian had a very strange expression on his face right now.

“Just put it on.”

Lin Shiqing couldn't stand to continue watching him any further, and felt that it was too disrespecting for him. Therefore she snatched the white face mask from the hands of one of the members of the NSA and put it back on his face.

Upon seeing this, Ye Feng's tears suddenly started streaming down his face, this beautiful girl really was very considerate, could it be that she already knew that his Cultivation had been suppressed, therefore he couldn't maintain his Camouflage for a long time?

However, the action of Lin Shiqing actually proved that the appearance of Mo Jiuge was really ugly. In addition, this guy Mo Jiuge wasn't only a big playboy, but had an awful skeleton type personality. Therefore, Ye Feng once again felt that if his beautiful master, Su Feiying had married this guy Mo Jiuge, then it would have absolutely left countless people with broken hearts.



Ye Feng was still under the control of two members of the NSA, and at this time, when Lin Detian was about to wave his hand, making those people take him away, suddenly Thunder, who was standing beside him, received a search report from one of his men, and he promptly shouted:

“Just wait for a moment.”

Thunder, this 35-36 years old man, covered with a kind of vigorous and resolute temperament, stared at Ye Feng with a dignified look and then said: “Evidently your injury is not very grave, besides, there are several key issues with us, rather you might help us now in clarifying those points. ”

“What did you find?”

Lin Detian asked.

“A half part of a white grimace face mask, which is exactly the same as his mask.”

Without beating about the bush, Thunder directly said : “That mask has not been completely destroyed in the explosion, most likely that armed escort, Zhui Hun had made preparation in advance, in order to pretend to be him at times.”

“Is it right?”

Lin Detian glanced at Ye Feng’s face mask, as his eyebrows slightly wrinkled.

“My friend, we are now moving towards your all actions for security consideration, still asking you to don’t mind too much.”

Thunder turned his head, and fired a question at Ye Feng : “Now may I ask, wasn’t it you who injured Lin Xiuwen?”

Although Thunder was directly under Lin Detian, as his subordinate, but still had his own thought process, and also the information gathered by him was way more than Lin Detian, therefore he firmly believed that he could make a more accurate judgment.

“No.”

Ye Feng shook his head decisively. Although during that time, he had grabbed and hit Lin Xiuwen until he passed out, but that was not sufficient enough to turn a human into a retard. Certainly, someone else was responsible for this.

“In the basement of Cai Shaohong’s villa, we fired a shot and hit someone’s thigh, was it you who were shot?”

Thunder inquired again.

“Yes.”

Ye Feng nodded, and lightly said : “I admit that I was the one who killed Cai Shaohong, I don’t have any reason to conceal it.”

With his full strength, he started operating Star Tomb Tactics in order to dissolve his Zhenqi throughout his body, which would immediately help him in quickly releasing his suppressed Cultivation. And surprisingly, the result was even better than what he had expected earlier. If this trend continued, it wouldn’t take even two hours, and he would be able to restore his Cultivation at its peak!

When the time would come, and he could be able to activate his Invisibility, then who could impede his footsteps? Thus under this circumstances, he could speak whatever he wanted with his full energy.

Thunder heard him and somewhat surprisingly gazed at him, as he thought that wasn’t he hit by the blue-ray gun? But was it still not enough for him? How could he show the signs of recovery so soon? It seemed that this kid had an amazing healing power.

However, on the other side, on hearing that Cai Shaohong was really killed by him, Lin Detian finally heaved a sigh of relief. But he couldn’t control his emotions and immediately threw his glances at Lin shiqing, to his surprise, he discovered a very complicated look was there all over her face. Even though he was her father, but still couldn’t figure out that what his daughter was thinking at the moment.

Logically speaking, Cai Shaohong was Lin Shiqing beloved, at least this was what he had heard outside as rumours. But now Cai Shaohong had

been murdered and surprisingly the person who had killed him was present in front of her, then in such circumstances, what might be going on in her mind right now? Besides this, just a moment ago, this person had put his life on the line just to protect her life. Didn't it become more complicated now for her?

“So, afterwards, returning to the villa, destroying all the evidence and also slaughtering our three soldiers, wasn't it you who did this?”

Thunder continued firing questions one after another, if this man had really killed three members of the National Security Agency, then in accordance with the special regulations, he must be given death penalty! Regardless of what crime Cai Shaohong had done, but killing the NSA member was definitely an inexcusable offence.

“No, it wasn't me again.”

Ye Feng shook his head, and continued saying in a sinking voice : “If I didn't guess wrong, then that person must be Zhui Hun, the armed escort.”

“Well, the last question, regarding Xiao Qi's kidnapping, were you behind it?”

By this time, a dignified expression had already taken birth on Thunder's face.

“Once again no, he must be the same person who holds a grudge against Cai Shaohong, and he would have taken her away so as to protect her.”

Ye Feng shook his head, as he placed his own speculation on the platter.

“I hope, whatever you said is true, and you turn out innocent.”

Thunder said that while nodding his head. Then he took a screen device out, pulled out a photograph from the top of it and handed it over to Lin Detian to have a look.

As a result, Lin Detian's complexion immediately took a 360-degree

turn, that picture, which was clicked by a member of the National Security Agency in the factory ruins, had abundant of long-haired freaks who were already blown to pieces in this explosion! Certainly, this fierce explosion had roasted these hairy freaks, but their hairs didn't get burnt completely.

Was this the proof that Cai Shaohong really helped Pei Keang Group in carrying out the gene medicine's experiment in this country China?

Unfortunately, there was no evidence to prove that Cai Shaohong was related with all these things. This matter must undergo thorough investigation, they couldn't merely rely on the masked man's one-sided statement.

"I hope you can help us in finding the evidence together."

Lin Detian shifted his vision towards Ye Feng, and faintly said : "I believe you are well aware that we don't have a single evidence, therefore, we will certainly push you out in front of Pei Keang Group to give an account of everything to them."

The thought of a true politician, apparently he placed the national interest on top over everything.

However, Ye Feng wasn't at ease at all, so long as he could drag on for some time, he could cast Invisibility and like a heavenly bird, he would fly high, then who could dare stop him?

Right at this time, suddenly a sound of the car passed on from quite afar, in this dark night its dazzling headlights which were on full beam, attracted the attention of surrounding all people.

"Shiqing, Shiqing!"

A lively and cheerful young girl's voice, but with a touch of concern, suddenly burst out from the car.

And as soon as they heard this voice, immediately a pleased expression appeared on their faces, wasn't this the voice of Xiao Qi?

## Chapter 132 - Irrefutable Evidence

---

An ordinary yellow Santana rental car, carrying Xiao Qi, pulled up and moved speedily while getting all jolted along the craggy and rugged weeds, and rapidly approached towards those people.

Meanwhile, Ye Feng also proliferated his Soul Search Technique, and in an instant discovered that the driver of this rental car was actually the skeleton masked man from before, which all of a sudden made his heart calm down, it really was him. Now that he came over along with Xiao Qi, so now it could be considered as the right time had arrived to reveal the truth.

Zi Zi!

Soon Santana stopped not far away from them, and as soon as the vehicle's door opened, Xiao Qi leapt and frisked about to get off the car and ran over joyously, in the meantime, when she noticed that Lin Shiqing as well as Ye Feng, both were also present right now, she finally took a breath of relief.

“Shiqing, you are all right, fortunately.”

Quickly, Xiao Qi ran up to her and while patting her chest, said.

“Xiao Qi, I still worry you a lot, right?”

Lin Shiqing moved forward to meet her, however, there was a touch of deep concern hanging on her face: “How about you, didn't you have any accident?”

“No, everything is all right, luckily .....

Xiao Qi happily nodded her head, simultaneously; a lively smile bloomed on her face. However, at this moment, she poured her glance towards nearby standing Ye Feng, who was actually being under the clutch of the NSA members, which turned her a bit indignant : “Why

have you guys caught him? He is my saviour, if it were not for him, then Cai Shaohong's scheme would already have made its way to the success!"

"Cai Shaohong's scheme? Quickly tell us more about it in detail."

Although, Lin Shiqing was startled by her words, but still, she asked that hastily.

"All materials are over here."

Xiao Qi spoke, as she opened her side bag, and drew out a stack of materials. Thereafter, while gazing at Ye Feng, she said in a ringing chuckle : "Relax, everything will be all right, there are lots of evidence with me, they will not embarrass you now."

However, for Ye Feng, these words sounded like she was trying to comfort a child, making him ultimately unable to bear and his corners of the mouth curled upwards, as he thought that this girl was also very adorable.

"Where does this evidence come from?"

Lin Shiqing received the material, and together with Lin Detian and Thunder, she also followed those materials closely for a while, and with the passing seconds, her facial expression also gradually changed.

These data, they were much more than only a piece of paper, it also had hard disk, USB, and so on. Merely a glimpse of these materials was enough to notice that Cai Shaohong's name was mentioned all over them, besides that, Pei Keang Group, their evil plans, and several related schemes, which they had planned to implement in this country, were also there in those materials!

Anyone could notice that this evidence couldn't be gathered in just one day.

"Shiqing, you don't know that Xiao Zhao, Zhao Mingze. A year ago, his whole family was slaughtered by Cai Shaohong's people!"

As Xiao Qi said that, the colour of dislike took birth on her lovable

young face: “Therefore, this year he changed his surname intentionally to get close to Cai Shaohong, so that he could take his revenge .....

Actually, it turned out to be him!

The moment Ye Feng heard that, suddenly the thoughts of the daytime banged in his mind, when he had decided to track Cai Shaohong down together with that effeminate guy. That guy, who had been actually lurking around Cai Shaohong for last one year, was one of the members of Southern Heavenly Gate!

However, this effeminate guy and the skeleton masked man, both were the polar opposite, simply speaking, this guy didn't resemble the skeleton masked at all! Not only the skeleton masked's tolerance ability was splendid, but his thoughts were also exquisite, he had the ability to hold everything in his hands. Most importantly, he knew very perfectly how to seize the opportunity; this talent had made him capable enough to cooperate with Ye Feng successfully while dealing with Cai Shaohong.

“What is the true identity of Xiao Zhao? A year ago when his whole family was killed, only then .....

Lin Shiqing asked that as she raised her head and looked towards her father, Lin Detian.

However, at this time, Lin Detian and Thunder, both of them simultaneously looked at each other, as if they saw the hidden meaning, the eyes of the opposite party was reflecting : “Regarding the extermination case of Southern Heavenly Gate, so surprisingly the true culprit turns out to be Cai Shaohong, who had pulled strings of Zhui Hun to get this job done!”

“There are plenty of video materials on this hard disk, containing the video recordings of Cai Shaohong's various mysterious actions .....

Xiao Qi continued explaining that there were these video data, which were entirely related to Cai Shaohong's evil plans, and they would certainly serve as an irrefutable proof!

On the one hand, she kept on explaining things one by one, while on

the other hand, she was constantly casting her grateful eyes toward Ye Feng, with this feeling that if he were not there to protect her, her life would have been destroyed by Cai Shaohong. Even now, although she would have been on the hoof, but it would have become a big problem ....

The graciousness of saving someone's life, this was something which was hard to dismiss from one's mind! Especially to a young girl, who was right onset of puberty, even more than that, for her it was like she had run into the hero, and her tender heart had already framed a picture of admiration for him.

While on the other side, just by looking at the expressions Xiao Qi's eyes were emitting, Lin Shiqing rightaway noticed that something was strange with her. This girl, could it be that she had started getting attracted towards him?

By this time, she had no clue about the situation Xiao Qi had bumped into, at first she was attacked by Lin Xiuwen in her own house, while the next day, she was carried away to the basement of Cai Shaohong's villa, where she confronted with five hairy monsters crisis. One must know that she had been living in the relatively secure area of Yanjing city, in short, she had never seen how people even fight. Now, abruptly she went through this kind of heart-chilling situation, her psychological barrier had collapsed ages ago.

However, during these critical moments, it was Ye Feng, who appeared before her twice wearing a mask, and rescued her from such a dangerous situation, wouldn't it obviously let her have this kind of strange thoughts?

Naturally, Ye Feng didn't notice it at all, because rightnow, his 100 % attention was towards maximum utilisation of even the last bit of his strength to efficiently operate an Immortal Technique "Star Tomb Tactics" to the fullest. Soon by taking advantage of this time, he really succeeded in promoting his shackled Cultivation to five years!

Now the time had knocked the door to go for an action.

He didn't want to go through the tortures and sufferings the NSA might



cause to him soon, also Su Menghan would have been still waiting for him.

“Just do so rightaway!”

Finally, he made up his mind, immediately his Zhenqi started seething in his whole body, and then got accumulated in his both legs.

Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace!

Under his foot, the huge force suddenly gushed out, making him shrug off the fetters of two National Security Agency members in a flash. Immediately his stature flashed, and leaving behind only a blur afterimage in-situ, he quickly disappeared in the dim light of night!

However, right before leaving the place, he gazed at the skeleton masked man sitting in the yellow Santana car. Coincidentally, the opposite party simultaneously looked at him and made a gesture of thumbs-up. Afterwards, he stepped on the accelerator, moved the steering wheel, and instantaneously started the car, and then unexpectedly turned the car towards the place where Lin Shiqing and other people were!

“Be careful!”

This instant turn of events, forced the complexion of the people presents on the field, to take a sudden change.

They hadn't thought at all that not even the four bullets could be capable enough to press down his Cultivation for the time being, surprisingly, he was still able to use his inner qi and display a martial arts skill to escape! They certainly didn't have noticed by now that what Ye Feng used to practice was not inner qi, rather it was Zhenqi.

They were already too late to react and think about doing something, and suddenly right at this moment, the skeleton masked man, driving a yellow Santana car, quickly hit to come over!

Hurriedly, a bit anxiously, the people started dispersing to avoid any accident which might happen, who knew that the yellow rental car would arrive in front of them, just to take a rapid turn, and by placing the car

buttock towards them, it pulled away all the way super fast.

“Stop him!”

Thunder immediately passed the order, and at the same time, nearby standing NSA soldiers raised their sophisticated firearms in their hands, all set to fire at him.

“Hey Hey, don’t act recklessly!”

On seeing this, Xiao Qi stood up at once , blocked their way, while her eyes fixedly stared at them: “They didn’t do anything wrong, so, on what ground do you want to catch them?”

As soon as she jumped before them and blocked their path, all NSA soldiers looked at each other in blank dismay, while mutually thinking that fuck, what the crap was this matter?

“Xiao Qi, you .....

Lin Shiqing said that and suddenly her gorgeous black eyebrows wrinkled up tightly, as she looked towards Xiao Qi, apparently, she had realised something about this girl by now, could it be that she had reached an agreement with Xiao Zhao ahead of time?

Obviously, by now, she had known that the skeleton masked male of the yellow Santana rental car was Xiao Zhao, Zhao Mingze. And right now, he clearly did this purposely to shield “Mo jiuge”, and quite obviously, also helped him in escaping. Furthermore, Xiao Qi also stood up to stir up more troubles and prevent the NSA person from pursuing them.

Naturally, at present everyone knew that Zhao Mingze was not Zhao Mingze, but he was the survivor of Southern Heavenly Gate extermination incident .....

To sum it up, presently these two masked men as well as Xiao Qi, these three people stood in the same battle line!

Due to the strange behavior of Xiao Qi, Lin Shiqing entered the deep thinking phase while looking into the eyes of Xiao Qi, and suddenly a

strange thought flashed in her mind, consequently she stood up hastily and blocked the movement of National Security people: “Come on Dad, let it pass, don’t pursue them.”

However her words were little unexpected for her father, Lin Detian, as a result, immediately he frowned, since he couldn’t understand his own daughter’s standpoint: “Why are you acting impetuously today?”

## Chapter 133 - The East China Sea Will Be In A Huge Wave

---

It was indeed unexpected for Lin Detian.

In usual times, his daughter always dealt with any kind of problems very rationally, but right now, it was quite obvious, neither Mo Jiuge nor “Zhao Mingze” were important people to her, then why did she come out and stood firmly, saying not to chase?

Although because of the help of these two men, they would turn out successful in raising the curtain from Cai Shaohong’s crafty plots and machinations and then making them publicly known, but still, they couldn’t let them go!

Even though it appeared now that the evidence was very authentic, but it was still far from true determination, therefore, a more precise investigation would be preferred in this case. Furthermore, in case something went wrong, and these two people couldn’t be found, then what would they do?

“It’s not like I am acting impetuously.”

Lin Shiqing glanced at Xiao Qi, as she smiled, then she shook her head and said: “There is a possibility that Mo Jiuge and Miss Long are in some kind of relationship, therefore, if we grab him, wouldn’t it make Long Clan at loggerheads over this matter? This kind of matter still needs to be dealt safely, if a thorough investigation will continue in the dark, then the decision won’t be late again. ”

She said so, obviously, there was a reason.

Firstly, what Zhui Hun said that Mo Jiuge had a relationship with Miss Long, this was the fact for them as they would prefer to believe this story, rather rejecting it completely. In addition, temporarily they didn’t know anything about what kind of attitude Long Clan generally possessed, so

they couldn't act blindly without thinking.

Secondly, she intentionally raised this topic in front of Xiao Qi, so as to make things clear to her, and dispel her small thoughts. Ye Feng already had an affair with Miss Long, therefore, Xiao Qi shouldn't try meddling with him!

Lin Shiqing didn't like to judge people by their appearances, but now the point was, Mo Jiuge's face was really something very difficult even for her to digest. Besides, what she had experienced just now, on that basis, it seemed that the character of this guy was also not up to the mark.

The moment she recalled that just now how badly she had been taken advantage by him, immediately blood rushed to her mind. However, when she thought that she had to save her best friend at all cost, immediately her anger was pressed down.

She had never been an unreasonable and persistent person, but somehow she couldn't control herself and turned a bit annoyed. After all, from childhood to maturity, she had never portrayed that something like this would have to her, like how Mo Jiuge pressed her under his body heavily, to the extent where it cause a severe ache in her chest .....

Lin Detian listened to her explanation, and sighed a bit : "Anyway, you are such a trouble, we are supposed to chase after them, it can't be skipped."

She heard that and a self-satisfied smile spread on her face, it seemed that her father really cared about her viewpoint very much.

What was there within the scope of this country China which couldn't be caught up by the collective strength of Lin Clan and the National Security Agency? Apparently, Lin Detian agreed to her viewpoint and decided to change his current strategy.

"Lin Shiqing, just ....."

On seeing them giving up, Xiao Qi finally took a breath of relief, however, her heart soon became a little restless, therefore, she ran over and quietly asked: "What did you just say about Miss Long?"

“The masked man, Mo Jiuge has an affair with her, a great beauty. But what’s wrong, does this little girl get jealous, ah?”

Lin Shiqing giggled tenderly and tried to tease her.

“How can it be, neither I know him for a long time, nor have any clue how he looks like, then how possibly with him .....

Although Xiao Qi said that, but her cheeks immediately turned bright red, she raised her head and looked towards Lin Shiqing’s face, and by throwing a giggling smile, said : “By the way, what happened to you just now? Look, there is little mud on your face.”

While saying that, she lifted her small hand and stroked on Lin Shiqing’s face lightly, so as to brush away the residual mud from her pretty face.

“It’s nothing .....

Lin Shiqing felt a little embarrassment, definitely, she couldn’t bring herself to narrate her everything, like how she was pressed by the masked man under his body, and so on. Therefore, she changed the subject and immediately asked: “This evidence, does Xiao Zhao give them to you.”

“Hmm, he said that ultimately he has taken his revenge from his enemy, and the effort he had exerted whole one year in ambushing him, finally paid him off.”

While Xiao Qi said that, she was somewhat moved: “Perhaps, later we couldn’t see him again.”

“Hmm?”

It sounded little strange to Lin Shiqing, how she couldn’t see him again?

“He said that he will seek for the new life.”

Xiao Qi smiled : “I think, if I were him, I would have also done so, after all, he had taken his revenge, Zhao Mingze, this identity now doesn’t need to exist anymore.”

“What’s his real name?”

Lin Shiqing asked.

“Ah? This, probably I haven’t asked .....

Xiao Qi gawked as she replied.

Lin Shiqing looked at this sweet, lovable little girl, and thought something while shaking her head helplessly. This little girl was indeed a naturally stupid person.

“In the end, who exactly is he? Last year, when Southern Heavenly Gate was wiped out completely, there were still two people who survived this incident .....

Lin Shiqing looked towards the direction where the yellow Santana had vanished, and couldn’t help but think about this.

However, at this time, on the other side, both Lin Detian and Thunder were occupied in their own things. They already had assembled people to validate whether the videotape was genuine or fake, besides this, they commanded the soldiers of the Fourth Guard Regiment, to cordon off the vicinity so that they could perform a thorough investigation again tomorrow morning.

In case, any useful evidence fell into their hands, then they could bravely conduct an international confrontation with Pei Keang Group’s capital!

“Oh, by the way, Thunder.”

Lin Detian thought something and called Thunder aside to discuss over something, his eyebrows slightly wrinkled as he said: “Regarding the East China Sea, is that area fall under the control of Li Feng’s squadron presently? Since, Long Clan has already assembled there in the East China Sea, therefore, in my opinion, this kid, Mo Jiuge perhaps will also pass.”

“Pretty good.”

Thunder complexion sank : “It is said that a fairy has appeared in the

East China Sea, therefore several people from the martial arts world have already rushed towards it.”

“Well, let’s do it like this, using merely a single person Li Feng perhaps won’t be enough to resolve this matter.”

Lin Detian said that, and thereafter, he submerged himself into a deep thinking mode for a moment. However, promptly he made a one shot decision: “By the time the complete investigation of the things is completed here, you also place your team there in that area. At first, ensure the public security, it doesn’t matter who the person is, as long as he dares to disrupt the social order, will be arrested rihtaway.”

“Yes, Chief.”

For the arrangements made by Lin Detian, Thunder didn’t have any objection.

Now the situation of the East China Sea seemed to be more tensed up, the team of Li Feng was insufficient since there were less than 100 people in his squad, and with that small group, how could they confront with Long Clan? Let alone this matter, there were already various kinds of martial artist present on the spot.

To send a group of people as reinforcements before any accident took place, was absolutely not a wrong decision. In case any big problem popped up there, then that would be harder to resolve with such a small group of people.

.....

While these things were going on one side, on the other side, Ye Feng, who waited for the right opportunity to act, and then escaped at one fell swoop, easily sensed with the help of Soul Search technique that the other masked man drove his car towards the direction where Lin Detian was along with the other group of people, obviously because he tried to create a chaotic situation, to help him escape in this chaos.

Thereafter, Xiao Qi bravely stepped forward and stopped the action of the NSA people, this incident was also seen by Ye Feng. Now he



apparently knew that this whole arrangement was done by the other masked man beforehand.

Seeing the NSA people didn't pursue him, after running around half a kilometre road, he stopped. But as soon as he stopped, a yellow Santana caught up and stopped beside him.

"We met again, brother."

Skeleton masked man softly chuckle, as he pushed open the door and got down.

His voice was very ordinary, which was making it difficult to recognise his identity. However, it was quite obvious that now Ye Feng didn't need to listen to the sound to identify the identity of others.

Since, he had the ability now to even penetrate through the mask, and see the appearance of the skeleton masked man.

Indeed his appearance was worth praising, he was a handsome young man, not the sissy Zhao Mingze type guy. Come to think of it, this Zhao Mingze's appearance was something which he had been generally using while changing his identity.

This explained that how talented this person was!

"Walk with me for a moment."

Ye Feng smiled while referring to the direction, also Su Menghan was left by him on that side. As for this car, of course it was impossible to leave it open and depart, after all, it would sound too conspicuous.

What was the reason, nobody knew, but every time Ye Feng acted together with this skeleton mask man, always there had been an inexplicable and bewildering tacit understanding between them, however, obviously in the heart of the opposite party, there was a feeling of being on guard at all times.

Perhaps it was because the opposite party was very smart.

"Hello, I am called Nan'fang."

The Skeleton masked man held his hand out, as his corners of the

mouth curled upwards : “Ye Feng, right?”

Ye Feng heard and immediately his eyes got narrowed, this guy, how could he guess his identity so affirmatively?

## Chapter 134 - He Was Just The First

---

Although Ye Feng was taken aback, but on the surface, he still maintained a very serene stature. He stretched out his hand and lightly patted the hand of the opposite party : “Are you really so sure that I am Ye Feng?”

“A guess.”

Nan’fang smiled while pulling his hand back.

“Oh?”

Ye Feng remained noncommittal as he serenely looked at him.

“As the rumours say, Ye Feng and Mo Jiuge are good friends.”

Nan’fang smiled : “But the fact is, actually nobody has ever seen them together at the same time, therefore, in my opinion, very likely both are the same person, what do you say?”

“Maybe.”

Under the mask, Ye Feng’s corners of the mouth slightly curled upwards, he neither properly admitted it nor denied it completely. However, his this attitude made Nan’fang more convinced.

As for Nan’fang, he would never rely merely on the martial arts skills and outside appearance to distinguish two people.

At first, Nan’fang wasn’t a martial artist himself, therefore, he couldn’t be like Long Wan’er. Secondly, Ye Feng was perceived as an ordinary person, so on that basis, he concluded that he couldn’t practice martial arts. Moreover, he was also proficient in appearance changing skill, so he had a more solid understanding of the fact, that appearance could never represent anyone.

He raised his hand and cast his black skeleton mask off from his face.

Suddenly a delicate and pretty young man's face appeared before Ye Feng, perhaps because of all year round he was under the mask using a new identity, therefore, his face turned a little pale, but it was still looking very elegant.

Nan'fang was one of the survivors of Southern Heavenly Gate's extermination case which happened a year ago. After Cai Shaohong was killed, he again saw the light of the day finally!

"I had been secretly gathering all materials related to Cai Shaohong."

His voice was very refreshing and crisp like sunlight, but at this moment, he said with a bit of emotion: "Originally, I had thought that it would take more time to expose his evil plot, but never thought he would be killed so fast, thanks to you for this."

While saying, he raised his head and looked towards Ye Feng's face, his white grimace face mask appeared incomparably gloomy and very strange under the moonlight.

"No need to mention it, one reaps what one sows, he really deserved it."

Ye Feng smiled as he patted his shoulder: "Come on, let's talk while walking."

"Your wound ....."

Suddenly burn marks behind Ye Feng's back appeared before Nan'fang's eyes.

"It's nothing that critical."

Ye Feng shook his head, as for this injury, he was just waiting for the full restoration of his Cultivation, then he could use Holy Cure Technique to cure it. As long as it wasn't the injury of lethal crippling, Holy Cure Technique could easily cure it. However, to treat his wound, this technique would consume some of his Zhenqi.

Naturally, if his head was exploded, or his hands or legs were chopped off, not even this Holy Cure Technique could do anything.

Their figure soon disappeared in the darkness, leaving behind the

yellow Santana rental car still standing at its original position, waiting to be towed away by the army next morning .....

In the cluster of weeds, walking two people were appearing exactly like the wilderness ghosts.

“You had grasped so many evidence, but why didn’t you report directly to Lin Clan?”

Ye Feng asked.

“Because if Cai Shaohong hadn’t died first, then he would have figured out plenty of ways to deny them.”

Nan’fang answered as he thought that since Cai Shaohong had died now, therefore, he dared to feel relieved and handed all the evidence over to Lin Clan, without a bit of fear that Cai Shaohong might think of a way to resolve it!

“Usually, in the school, there should have a lot of opportunities to kill him, don’t you think?”

Ye Feng had some doubts, presumably, as per Nan’fang’s methods, killing Cai Shaohong in the school wasn’t a difficult job, was it? Then that meant, he wanted to bravely face dangers and grab him.

“He was just the first.”

Nan’fang said, as his eyes flashed a hint of cold awn : “He was my first personal enemy, even if I had to put my life on the line to grasp him, I would have done that. Unfortunately, he was just the first, I have to be more careful now, can’t throw away my life like this, and that also so early.....”

Ye Feng listened to his explanation and probably understood his hidden meaning.

However, he did not dig in the detail to ask who the opposite party was. Although they had worked together very happily and cooperatively, but something was still there which Ye Feng couldn’t ask him to clarify, just like how Ye Feng did, similarly Nan’fang also didn’t give all of his cards

in the hands of the opposite party.

“Maybe we can also continue to cooperate.”

Nan'fang went into a deep ponder for a while, and then by putting on a smile, said : “No matter how, this first time cooperation had been quite delectable. Tomorrow I will set out for the East China Sea, so it's like a destined goodbye. ”

“Going to the East China Sea?”

Ye Feng said as his eyebrows automatically turned into a frown.

“Hmm, my next personal enemy, it is said that these days will appear in the East China Sea ..... Of course, you don't misunderstand.”

Nan'fang waved: “My personal enemy is not someone from Long Clan.”

“Did you already know that I have relation with Long Clan?”

Ye Feng asked.

“Now I'm afraid,perhaps the whole country knows about it, right?”

Nan'fang helplessly smiled : “Just a rumour, you got on top of Miss Long ..... Keke Keke.”

“Has it been spread by the person of Heavenly Sword Palace?”

Ye Feng pondered for a moment and felt a bit puzzled, this thing finally happened.

“As per my intelligence report, just recently, one of the persons of ‘Happily married couple of swords’ was killed, if I haven't guessed wrong then it should be you?”

Nan'fang guessed that while gazing at Ye Feng's strange white face mask.

“It's me.”

Ye Feng smiled : “In addition, I will also go to the East China Sea.”

“Oh? Is it because of Long Clan, or to accompany me?”

Nan'fang tentatively asked that.

“At present, I can’t leave Yanjing.”

Ye Feng said while thinking that he didn’t have any clue where his grandfather, Ye Wentian would be currently. As he still remembered that his grandfather had strictly prohibited him from leaving Yanjing for the certain time period. Ye Feng was still very afraid of him since he knew that he was no match for him, even his Invisibility would completely fail in front of him.

“Then I’ll go ahead tomorrow first.”

Nan’fang said with some regrets : “This is my telephone number, you can contact me when you arrive at the East China Sea, meanwhile, I’ll go first and will try to find out some information.”

As for the identity of the sissy type man, Zhao Mingze, naturally, it was no longer needed!

“Thank you very much.”

Ye Feng didn’t decline, instead, he quickly wrote down his number. Since the opposite party would certainly head to the East China Sea tomorrow, so didn’t it mean that his next enemy would be certainly someone from the martial arts world? Hence, by judging his own strength, wouldn’t it be very difficult for him to strike his enemy down?

The plan was like this, at first, Nan’fang would carry out a proper investigation by the time Ye Feng arrived, then both sides would cooperate with each other again, which in return would result in the mutual benefits and achieving common progress!

On the one hand, they were having a friendly interaction, while on the other side, Ye Feng was moving step by step closer towards the location where Su Menghan was. It was less than one kilometre when these two people had parted their ways.

They just walked together, because they really needed to exchange some words. However now, it was obviously impossible for Ye Feng to take him further towards Su Menghan’s location.

“The cooperation was delectable.”

Just before his departure, Nan'fang raised a fist towards him.

“Pleased.”

Ye Feng smiled, similarly made a fist and bumped with his. Not only the thought process of Nan'fang was meticulous, but had a very strong logical reasoning ability also. Things not ended here, he was proficient in hiding his identity. After going to the East China Sea, he could perhaps become Ye Feng's big boost!!

Soon, Ye Feng looked at the rear view of Nan'fang fading away in the bushes, then after, he displayed Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace, and advanced towards that place where he had hidden Su Menghan. Two minutes later, finally by using Soul Search technique, he detected his Camouflage magic array.

But right at this moment, his facial expression suddenly took a huge change.

Su Menghan had gone!

His heart was a bit startled, where could she go? The Camouflage magic array which he had set up was still there, even the Camouflage jacket was also there. Before leaving this place, he had to take his Camouflage Jacket off so that he could pretend to be the masked man, or else if wearing the same clothes he had appeared before the people, even the fools could have understood that Ye Feng and the masked man were the same person.

He ran three steps around the edge of that magic array, but really didn't find Su Menghan's figure anywhere.

Suddenly at this time, a thought hit his mind, the explosion which happened in the abandoned factory, could it be that this little girl had also seen that big bang and would have become extremely worried about him, because of that, she would have run out of this magic array?



## Chapter 135 - The Sword Tip Falls From The Heaven!

---

This was just excellent, if Ye Feng couldn't find Su Menghan, then naturally it was impossible for him to go back alone.

“If I'll keep on running like this all over the place, I might get caught by the NSA or military people, mightn't I? To say it like this, I must put on some clothes rightnow to go back .....”

He contemplated for a moment, using the identity of the masked man to appear again, would be clearly inappropriate. Therefore, the only option left with him was to take off his mask and resume Ye Feng's identity once again.

“Women ah, they are really very troublesome.”

Ye Feng wondered, but no matter what, he couldn't abandon her.

He picked up a jacket which was thrown in the magic array, as he wanted to drape it over his body and go back where Lin Detian was, so that he could arouse his interest and make him launch his troops to find her. However, he just had run a few steps and suddenly sensed a strange appearance popped up on the radar of his Soul Search Technique.

Actually, around hundred meters away, he felt the presence of Su Menghan in some underground place! She actually hadn't run far, but the question was, why in the world was she in such an underground place?

Without wasting his time in further thinking, he immediately threw his jacket down and burst into a quick run like the wind. With every step, he got closer to that place, simultaneously the picture of the current situation of that underground place also got clearer to him.

This place was actually a basement again. Ye Feng's Soul Search

Technique swept around the whole area, even inside the basement and soon found something, which forced him to admit that something was there, which was indeed a pleasant surprise for him!

In addition to Su Menghan, the basement not only had a guy with a broken arm, but several password-locked iron boxes were also placed in its corners. Weren't these boxes the same which he had seen in the basement of Cai Shaohong's villa?

As for that broken arm guy's identity, of course, he was that perverted man of Heavenly Sword Palace, Li Hua. Previously, he had fifteen years Cultivation and had been a very challenging and strong opponent for Ye Feng. However now, wasn't it obvious enough to say that Ye Feng would certainly look down on him?

It didn't matter that currently Ye Feng's Cultivation had been in a suppressed state, he still had Soul Search Technique as his trump card. Just by relying on it, he could never come out weaker than that broken arm man, Li Hua!

"No wonder how that guy Zhui Hun from before knew my relationship with long Wan'er. So, it turns out like this, this guy has been hiding here, definitely, there will be a motto behind it."

Although Ye Feng was engaged in this own thought process, but at the same time, he swept his Soul Search Technique once again and soon noticed that Su Menghan was absolutely fine there. This mere thought that nothing had happened to her, finally calmed down his heart. Obviously, if he had come to this place a bit late, then this wouldn't have been the case.

However, shortly after, he again sensed that there were also the corpses of two other women in that basement, evidently they had just died, but before dying, they really had been trampled upon badly. Ye Feng didn't want to think about this, as he already had an idea that this was certainly done by that perverted man, Li Hua.

"This place, come to think of it, doesn't it look like it has been prepared by that armed escort, Zhui Hun as a hiding place for Li Hua?

Fortunately, I have the Soul Search Technique under command now, or else meeting with him again .....

Ye Feng coldly snorted, he simply couldn't dare to imagine the consequences that might have happened since Su Menghan was now in his clutch.

However now, the things were crystal clear.

So far, Li Hua hadn't made his move on Su Menghan, and he wouldn't have this opportunity always!

.....

On the other side, in the basement, Li Hua was busy playing with his connected arm, which had been joined to his body not long ago, but how couldn't he feel uncomfortable? It was entirely not as good as before, that sort of flexibility and an unobstructed feeling was still missing.

"Little bastard Mo Jiuge, don't get caught by me, otherwise, you will be certainly shredded into one hundred and eight pieces, to vent my hatred hidden in my heart!"

Li Hua bitterly bah and spat out his saliva.

Suddenly he thought of his severed arm, after that incident when his arm was chopped off, he soon bumped into Zhui Hun, who gave financial aid to him. However, he was badly struggling through his extreme hatred, which took the form of a determined intention, to slaughter that guy who left him with one of his arms chopped off.

Because of his notoriety in the martial arts world, a warrant had been issued by the secular world to arrest him as the most wanted criminal. Therefore, obviously he wouldn't dare to appear in the hospital, all he could do was to look for some good and reliable old friends, who could help him.

The series of explosions which took place just a moment ago, although Li Hua would have certainly sensed it even from such a distance, but he wouldn't have thought that Zhui Hun would have already died in this explosion.

“Bah, it seems that Zhui Hun’s plan also paved its way towards failure. Crap, also I don’t have any idea why did he sell his life for helping others, isn’t he like a dog in the end? Even if he ran away from this country, and received financial aid by Cai Clan, still he didn’t need to be so obedient like the dog .....

These muffled thoughts were running in his mind, making him very puzzled. This guy Zhui Hun, why did he use to take orders from Cai Clan of Pei Keang Group. After all, no matter how it could be said, but they were all foreign devils.

Each martial artist always had some of their own perseverance.

Li Hua, although he was submerged in all kinds of evil deeds and also had a very perverted behaviour, but still he was very patriotic. But for Zhui Hun, nothing mattered to him, he just knew one thing, and that was the graciousness of the dripping water, which acted as a gushing spring for him!

When he had been listed as the wanted criminal in China, he fled from this country to overseas, however, if it were not for Cai Shaohong’s and his Clan who had given financial and other aids to him at times, he would have been already grasped and given death penalty by the people of China. Because of this, for the lifetime, he dedicated his life in the service of Cai Clan.

This kind of insistence, Li Hua naturally couldn’t understand.

Li Hua rested for a moment, then raised his head and looked towards a young beautiful girl, whom he had just accidentally caught. His gloomy and eerie face suddenly revealed a lascivious look, making his facial expression gradually appear more perverted.

Although, he had already played with those two dead women yesterday, but those two, how could they have such a captivating and pretty aura like this young girl had?

“Beauty, what’s your name?”

Li Hua opened his mouth and asked indecently.

“Humph.”

Su Menghan didn't want to think about him, so she looked away. Currently, her hands and feet were fastened with a rope, therefore she had no way to escape, which was making her extremely anxious.

If she had known earlier and listened to Ye Feng, then wouldn't it have been good if she had stayed in that magic array all along? However now, the situation had changed, the terrifying flame of that explosion led her to come out of that hidden place, and unfortunately as soon as she stepped out, was caught by this guy, and was brought on the verge of death.

Looking at those two female corpses sprawled in the corner, Su Menghan could only guess that if nobody arrived here soon to save her, then her fate would be exactly like those two female corpses.

However, this closed basement had more than two meters of depth from the ground, and there were steel plates clamped in the middle of it. The things not ended here, the worst part was, it had a very subtle entrance, blocked by the clumps of weeds.

In this kind of gloomy place, would someone really come to rescue her?

Li Hua looked at her flustered appearance and his heart blossomed with great enjoyment.

Actually, Zhui Hun made him guard those iron boxes here, since he usually got bored soon, so his only pleasure was to go out and grab a woman to have fun with her. Obviously, he didn't dare to go too far, or else in case he left the place and was accidentally caught by the investigating NSA people, then that would definitely be the dead end for him.

Obviously, he was very confident that his technique was full proof, to the extent where not even those idiots NSA people could succeed in finding his trail.

Regarding Li Hua, what he liked the most was to see the nervousness and fear of a woman, but certainly, this was not the end, his most

favourite thing was to see the tears of a woman, coupled with her blood!

He stood up, and tightly gripped two long swords in his each hand. Afterwards, he slowly advanced towards tied Su Menghan, as his corners of the mouth curled up and formed a hideous smile.

Shua!

He raised his intact hand and waved his sword, and while gazing at her with nearly crazy vision, he gradually licked the blade's edge, and then suddenly, he moved his sword towards her face, to strike and hurt her.

Under the pale yellow light of the basement, Su Menghan's beautiful pupil showed the reflection of his long sword. All she could do was clenching her teeth, while thinking that just like how Ye Feng had taught her, if she could use Star Tomb Tactics with her full strength, then she might succeed in shaking these fetters off. However, right at this time.

Roar!

From above those two, a burst of the sound suddenly transmitted, followed by a golden long sword tip directly descended from the heaven!

Puff!

Li Hua hadn't yet responded and all of a sudden, his raised arm instantly started spouting fresh blood and immediately his long sword with a loud sound, also fell to the ground.

This pathetic child, not long ago, his one of the arms had been chopped off, which hadn't been even fixed yet properly, and again he got his another arm severed.

"Cultivation is suppressed, but I am still able to congeal the golden sword out, it seems that the suppressing meridian firearms have really no effect on me."

A leisurely voice resounded, immediately followed by a figure descended right in front of Su Menghan, wearing a white face mask. By directly piercing through the steel layer, which was above those two people, that figure jumped down. Obviously, he was none other than Ye

Feng, who pierced the ceiling and caused a large hole, from where the beautiful night sky could be clearly seen.

“It’s you!”

The moment Li Hua’s eyes fell on Ye Feng’s face mask, his facial expression tremendously changed at once, coupled with the severe pain caused by striking his arm down. Immediately, he clenched his teeth with overflowing hatred while looking at him!

## Chapter 136 - Asura Tactics!

---

When Su Menghan saw a figure appeared in front of her, she couldn't help but be stunned for a moment, as her jaw automatically dropped. How could it possible that someone had really arrived at this sort of place to rescue her?

However this person was also already in a very miserable condition, it seemed that something had scorched his back intolerably through his clothes. Although, he had held a long golden sword very gracefully ..... but something was not right!

Su Menghan reacted suddenly, wasn't this guy Ye Feng?

Since at present, the appearance of Ye Feng was too distressed, she couldn't recognise him immediately, but when she gave a closer look at him, she didn't take long and immediately understood the situation. How did his appearance turn like this? Did he get injured in this explosion?

"Ye Feng ....."

Su Menghan couldn't help but speak out restlessly.

"Relax, everything is all right."

Ye Feng said that while looking up, and immediately activated his Rapid Shadow immortal Trace. In an instant, his stature flashed, accompanied by a golden sword light and suddenly it pierced through Li Hua's chest at one fell swoop.

Li Hua literally couldn't get the time to even react, but even if he had reacted, he wouldn't have been able to pick up his sword without hand. Finally, he died, but before dying, his gloomy eyes fixedly stared at Ye Feng, he died with injustice and remaining grievance.

Afterwards, Ye Feng kicked his corpse and it went rolling directly towards the corner of the basement, soon there was no longer any



movement in his body.

Shua Shua.

Immediately after, without turning back, he brandished his long sword twice and cut off the rope with which Su Menghan was tied. Since his Soul Search Technique was still active now, therefore, he didn't need to rely on his eyes to see things.

“Be prepared, we'll immediately leave this place.”

Ye Feng spoke, as he advanced towards another corner of the basement, where he lowered his head and closely looked at those four password-locked fine iron boxes.

He still remembered that in the basement of Cai Shaohong's villa, these four password-locked fine iron boxes were there together with that rare Heavenly Stone Bead. However, at that time, he hadn't gotten the chance to know what actually was there inside them?

Without further ado, he instantly swept his Soul Search Technique and found that there were something like books stored in those four iron boxes. And as for what jotted down on their cover, not even his technique turned out successful in figuring it out.

He waved his long golden sword and cut open the top of those four boxes very easily, in a flash. This kind of material was considered as incomparably hard material quality in the secular world, even if they fell into the hands of the NSA, they still would need a huge effort to open them. However, as for Ye Feng's sword, they seemed like a bean curd, which couldn't even withstand its single blow and immediately got collapsed.

“Asura Tactics?”

The thing appeared before his eyes were four books, which made him gawk at once. He couldn't control himself from hurriedly taking them out of those boxes.

These four books were like the rare books of martial arts. Furthermore, they were fine wire-binding books, and it seemed that they were locked

there for some years. In addition to Asura Tactics, there were also other three books, and they were 'A Thousand Miles Chasing Soul Blade Technique', 'Asura Suppressing Soul Sound Wave' and 'Ghost Shadow Soul Step'.

"Where do these come from?"

Ye Feng frowned as he went into a deep thinking, could it be that Cai Shaohong, together with that rare heavenly stone bead, had prepared this thing to make himself prepare for practice? Or did he want to ship them abroad to carry out their research?

He couldn't correctly guess what the goal of Cai Shaohong was, but it was quite obvious that these things had been obtained by Cai Shaohong not long ago. No matter what he wanted to do, but as for now, these things finally fell into the hands of Ye Feng.

"As for reading the books, I will wait until I return to my villa, for now, we should leave this place as soon as possible."

Ye Feng had made the decision to go back without wasting any single moment, he turned around and saw that actually Su Menghan had already stood up and looking at him eagerly.

"Keep these martial arts books properly, we'll go now."

Ye Feng said that, as he tossed those four books towards her, making her hold in her arms, then he went forward and slipped his hand around her slender waist to hug her. Simultaneously, Zhenqi under his feet started moving, and all of a sudden he jumped and came out of the basement.

Right after getting outside, Ye Feng waved his sword and cut open a big hole on the ground. By this way, he intentionally opened the chance for the NSA people to quickly discover this place. Now, better they should leave this place as soon as possible.

Regarding Li Hua's corpse, Ye Feng was too busy to think about it.

If his Cultivation hadn't been surprised by those special bullets, then he could have actually used an Immortal Technique 'Red Flame' and

would have burnt his corpse down completely by now, without leaving any trace. However now, it wasn't actually possible.

Moreover, if he had the Black Jar of Souls right now, then again he would have absorbed the soul of Li Hua, so that he could make a good use of him by drawing something important out from his mouth in future. But what a pity, before heading to Lin's residence, he had left that Black Jar outside Qingfeng Park, since he wasn't in the mood to carry something like this two fist-sized thing, on his body all along as a burden.

Come to think of it, if he had that special storage ring of the World of Immortals, then that would have been also nice .....

Shortly after they left, the soldiers of the Fourth Guards Regiment really showed up there while searching through the area.

"It's really very strange, how we are looking for that pair of high school students, but still can't find any trace."

"True, we are really unable to crack this case. Let's assume that after the truck was overturned, they would have suddenly run away, but still, it can't be possible for them to penetrate through our tight encirclement and escape."

A line of ten individuals was discussing while searching all over. Their searching goal was not only to search and find out some evidence against Cai Shaohong, but they had also received a notice from their Chief that they had also to search the whereabouts of Ye Feng and Su Menghan, unfortunately, they didn't get any achievement so far.

Soon, they found that place, which actually had a huge hole and underneath of which, there was the dim light shining out!

Several people hastily stepped forward, and saw that in the basement there was the body of Li Hua with a severed arm, as well as two female bodies were also sprawled there, which made their complexion suddenly changed.

.....

The affairs of the suburban area, currently they didn't hold any importance to Ye Feng.

How to collect more information to expose Cai Shaohong's crime, international negotiations with Pei Keang Group, things like these, which were supposed to be taken care by Lin Clan, were completely irrelevant for Ye Feng, neither he had spare time to think about, no he wanted to take any initiative.

At present, after casting off his mask and putting on his coat, he resumed the identity of Ye Feng properly. Thereafter, while holding Su Menghan in his bosom, he returned all the way back to Qingfeng Park by using Rapid Shadow immortal Trace.

However, he didn't enter the villa community, instead at first he separated from Su menghan, afterwards, he turned towards the community entrance and walked towards the nearby office building, which was not far from this entrance.

Actually, Scar was there with his men.

After killing Cai Shaohong, when he returned and thought to use the Black Jar of Souls, right at that time he saw Scar burning with anxiety and waiting at the doorway of his office. Afterwards, soon he saw the Green military truck appeared and captured Su menghan, but he couldn't do anything!

Therefore, he threw the Black Jar of Souls towards scar, making him take good care of it and also told him a little about this stuff along with Zhao Yibei's case. Before heading to Lin Clan's residence, he left Scar alone in the office, guarding the Black Jar.

After getting back here again, when he felt that now there would be no danger, he casually flipped through the book of Asura Tactics for a while and almost got an idea. Therefore, he made Su Menghan return to his villa first along with those four martial arts book, and then he went to his office.

Nowadays, Scar was leading ten trusted friends, who were very dedicated to him. Currently, they all were on shift duty, to maintain a

proper watch.

“Elder brother Ye.”

As soon as Ye Feng’s silhouette appeared in Scar’s line of sight, he promptly set out alone to give him a warm welcome. He had a stony and valiant temperament, even if he was no longer the boss of Heavenly Serpent Gang, but still he had been exerting an all-around effort to still exists.

“Now , let me tell you two good news.”

By the time, Ye Feng had arrived at the corridor alone with him, where he straightforwardly said: “First, just now I had found one Core Law of martial arts ‘Asura Tactics’. I casually flipped through it and found that the Core Law had a little shortcoming, so, once I modify it, you all can start practising. ”

The words hardly went out, and it aroused the excitement of Scar at once, which instantly appeared on his face, wasn’t it so fast? Not only that, but Ye Feng said “you all” instead of “you”, didn’t it clearly mean that besides him, his trusted henchmen could also practice now?

That way, in the future, how formidable they would become!

“Of course, this matter is extremely important.”

Ye Feng said while holding a plank face : “Once you enter the threshold, your identity would be completely different than now .....

The people of the martial arts world had an awful tendency to give a great significance to their own things, and they usually never agreed to share their Core Law with outsiders, but for Ye Feng, he had completely no scruples. As long as this could enhance his powers, he wouldn’t hesitate a bit to do it, of course, he must not go against his conscience.

## Chapter 137 - Astonishing Tactics

---

Scar listened to Ye Feng's words and immediately nodded his head with a straight face, as he said: "Elder brother Ye, you rest assured, I will certainly keep a proper check before picking someone up, and the unqualified person will be rejected at once!"

This way, Ye Feng finally bestowed his trust on him. Giving him one martial arts technique to practice, in addition, making his trusted friends also to practice together with him, apparently, he wanted to train them with the intention to induce his own strength. Furthermore, interestingly Scar already knew that they were going to be the first group of people, who would become Ye Feng's earliest power!

At the same time, Scar used to very much admire him. In the evening, Ye Feng just ran out for a while and suddenly had gotten his hands on one Core Technique of martial arts, which was too formidable!

"Hmm, regarding the second matter."

After saying that, Ye Feng considered for a moment, then said : "Actually, I have found the soul of Yibei, but temporarily can't let you meet him. So later on, once I get hold of Soul practising technique, I will then awaken him. Although he doesn't have the body, but his consciousness still exists, therefore when the time comes, he can also fight together with us! "

Soul Cultivation Technique, which had been considered as a very precious technique in the World of the Immortals. But currently, the point was, Ye Feng didn't know how long he had to wait to finally grab this technique. Though, it was certain that he would do everything possible to grab it as soon as possible.

"What, soul? Practice?"

Scar heard that and suddenly froze to the spot.

Could he also practice Soul Cultivation Technique? There was no mistake! If Ye Feng could get hold of Asura Tactics, let them practice martial arts, made him feel very flamboyant, then how could it be strange if now he could also practice the Soul Cultivation Technique?

“Because Yibei had always been an ordinary person during his lifetime, and had never practised the foundation, therefore, he has also the ability to practice the Core Technique of Soul Cultivation.”

Ye Feng shook his head: “As for the details, you don’t need to know about it temporarily, besides, must not disclose this matter to anyone.”

In the case of an Immortal Cultivator, if he died, but he had known the Core Technique of Soul Cultivation during his lifetime, but still he wouldn’t be able to practice this. So now how could Ye Feng make a martial arts practitioner practice this technique? Ye Feng didn’t know the answer yet, because he hadn’t practised so far.....

“Understood.”

However, his complexion sank, although he usually had a very ferocious look, but at present, he was appearing matchlessly firm. This kind of secret matter, it might be assumed that if it were not for Zhao Yibei’s relationship with him, Ye Feng probably wouldn’t have told him anything, right?

He would naturally keep it a secret!

Now that Scar had recognised Ye Feng as his elder brother, so now he would always follow his words, without any objection!

Seeing him nodding, Ye Feng continued : “Go back to start your selection, must first ensure absolute loyalty, then only tell them anything about the matter of the martial arts. Now I will go back first.”

“Elder brother Ye, take care of yourself.”

Scar respectful said.

Ye Feng smiled and patted his shoulder: “There is no need to treat me as an outsider, we are all brothers.”

After finished saying, he entered the room to take the Black Jar of Souls and then immediately departed.

Scar stood at the doorway and from behind he looked at Ye Feng entering Qingfeng Park, at this moment, his eyes were shining with extreme excitement.

The martial arts, could he also start practising it finally?

.....

After getting back to the villa, Ye Feng proliferated his Soul Search Technique and found Su Menghan currently taking a bath, which instantly made his heart all fiery. Although with this technique he could see her bathing, but not as good as seeing her directly. It was just an imagination, but was still enough to make a person's heart bubble up with a burning passion.

Interestingly, at the time of his rebirth to this world, Su Menghan was the first person he had seen, and that also when she was bathing. Currently, he just casually associated her that captivating and exquisite figure for a moment, and immediately that thought made his nose bleed almost spurt out.

Since he was into that sort of relationship with Long Wan'er in the Changbai Mountain, he felt that he was getting easily excited in this aspect, which was absolutely not a good phenomenon.

All alert, Ye Feng secretly entered the villa while shaking his head to kick this stupid thought out of his mind. Almost after taking thirty-two steps upstairs, he found the book of Asura Tactics, along with the other three books, which had been carefully hidden by Su Menghan.

Su Menghan was not stupid, such an important thing, obviously she couldn't just casually throw them in the hall. Even though she hid those four rare books into the closet of the bedroom, but still it didn't take long to Ye Feng to find those books, by using his Soul Search Technique, he discovered them without any difficulty.

As he entered the bedroom, he felt the sweet fragrance of this young



girl immediately greeted his nostril. However, by completely ignoring it, he sat down on the sofa, holding those four books in his hands, finally all relaxed.

Finally, he got the time to relax, once the effect of those special bullets completely disappeared, then he could cast Holy Cure Technique to heal the burn injury on his back. Afterwards, he would take a bath and then would finally hit the bed.

A series of incident happened this whole evening, had made him physically and mentally totally exhausted. However, the thought of his injury, he couldn't bear but remember that time when he was on top of Lin Shiqing's body, heavily pressing her below, the feeling of her that full and soft chest .....

“Keke, I must think something else, or let's study this Asura Tactics first.”

He shook his head, as he tried to cast off the beautiful figure of Lin Shiqing from his mind.

Randomly, he just flipped through the pages and soon found that the foundation of this Asura Tactic was inappropriate. Asura Tactics was called Asura, it might be because this technique reeked of blood, while the other three rare books, it was estimated that they were also necessary for supporting martial arts repertoires.

Precisely speaking, just because of its bloody overbearing characteristics, Ye Feng felt that it had a flaw.

As these thoughts rolled through his memories, he suddenly remembered that he had already seen several modifications in some of the Immortal Techniques. The moment he remembered this fact, quickly he took a pen and a notebook, and wrote down his revised Asura Tactics.

The modified Asura Tactics would be perfect for Scar! Originally practising this Asura Tactics to a certain extent would likely to very much affect the person's intelligence, but after the modifications, it wouldn't have such a problem.

If Ye Wentian would see the current action of Ye Feng, he would certainly be astonished once again to the extent where his jaw would also automatically drop.

Fuck, the Core Technique of martial arts could be easily modified as per one wish, couldn't it?

This technique, did it need to go against the heaven's will?

Too astonishing!

However, this kind of thing was completely a trifling matter for him. Whether it was primary martial arts Technique, or Immortal Techniques, in both areas, he just needed to pour a single glance and that was enough for him to easily see a doorway, which used to encourage him to bring the appropriate desired modifications.

However, when it came to intermediate Core Technique or even the high-ranking Core Technique, he would feel completely helpless, since he had never bumped into any intermediate or advanced-level Core Technique .....

When Ye Feng had completely rewritten the whole Asura Tactics, just after that Su Menghan happened to finish her bath and blow-dried her long hair. By now, she didn't have any idea that Ye Feng had already returned to the villa. Therefore, as soon as she opened the bedroom's door and her eyes fell on Ye Feng there, she was taken aback, and a bit scared she said : "You're back?"

"Hmm."

Ye Feng put aside the pen, looked back, and what he actually saw was she was standing there in front of him, wrapped in a pink nightgown as if she was going to take rest. Since she had worn a very thin cotton cloth, therefore, his eyes unintentionally got trapped into her almost visible snow white and fuller chest, which was appearing very conspicuous, extremely attractive and quite alluring at the moment.

However, when Su Menghan noticed him looking at her strangely, instantly her complexion turned red, she quickly ran and got into the

bed, and concealed her slender white body under a quilt, only leaving her pure and lovely face out.

“What are you doing?”

She saw that just now Ye Feng probably was writing something, so she couldn't help but ask him straight.

“Modifying the foundation of Asura Tactics.”

Without thinking much, he thoughtlessly replied.

“Eh? Modifying the martial arts technique?”

Su Menghan heard that and felt a bit strange, but did Ye Feng really have this sort of flagitious ability? If he made a mistake during its modification, then the people who would be practising this modified technique, wouldn't they be possessed by the devil or something like this?

Ye Feng put away the book and decided to give this thing to Scar tomorrow.

“I'll go to take a shower, by the time I come back to you, till then you take a nap.”

Ye Feng threw a smile towards the wrapped in the blanket Su Menghan, and then turned around to leave the bedroom.

This sentence made Su Menghan's cheeks turn bright red, as if they were 'painted' with red colour.

After a while, why would he come back to look for her again?

What was he planning to do?

## Chapter 138 - Tang Clan's Tang Qingling

---

Ye Feng went downstairs, where he took out the Black jar of souls and waved his hand to cast Gathering Soul Technique, so as to call the souls of dead people out. Consequently, the souls of Hai Tang and Tornado Axe soon appeared out.

Only after a little interrogation with them, he could hit the bed peacefully, with ease.

As the souls emerged out, immediately two virtual shadow figures appeared in the villa's hall, which looked very gloomy and strange against the background of the surrounding.

“There are several questions boiling up in my heart rightnow, so just answer them honestly.”

While looking at those two semi-transparent souls floating in the air, Ye Feng lightly said : “How much you know about Long Clan?”

These words barely fell, and Hai Tang reacted at once, and said : “I’ll speak, I’ll speak first, so far as I know, Long Clan is considered as one of the three big forces in the entire world, which has not only occupied Mt. Wangwu Cave, but Mt. Luofushan Cave as well.....”

However, right after saying that, a trace of fear crawled across her face, because she already clearly knew that this Mt. Luofushan Cave was originally under the command of Ye Clan, however now, Long Clan had taken hold of it. Therefore, she was scared that Ye Feng would certainly lose his temper hearing that.

“Continue.”

Ye Feng nodded and indicated her to go on with what she was speaking. However, regarding the former matter, basically neither he had any clue about it, nor wanted to pay much attention to it.

“Yes.”

Seeing that, Hai Tang couldn't dare to be hesitant, although her charming face had already taken the panic-stricken expression, but still she confidently said : “Reportedly, the ancestors of Long Clans have already surpassed 100 years Cultivation. And it is also widely known that there are more than ten people in the entire Long Clan, who had over 50 years Cultivation. The story does not end here, currently, the head of the Clan, Long Mo'ran, who is only in his forties, still has Cultivation over fifty years. Shockingly, at present, he is the first person in the entire martial arts world, who has a terrific talent, he has already grabbed the third layer of Romantic Sword Technique..... ”

The third layer of the sword technique?

Ye Feng heard that and immediately scowled, as per her story, it seemed that Long Mo'ran was obviously something not good to deal with. Moreover, if this development continued, then that day wouldn't be so far, and soon in just another twenty to thirty years of time, he would definitely become the first most powerful martial artist in the martial arts world!

Most importantly, even such an extraordinary and magnetic martial arts scholar of his time, Ye Wentian had been only able to grasp Dragon Claw Hand Technique to its second layer.

“Who are another two big forces?”

By raising his chin, Ye Feng asked that.

“They are Tang Clan and Taiji Palace.”

Hai Tang respectfully replied.

“Oh? So your Heavenly Sword Palace is not one of them?”

Ye Feng asked doubtfully.

“Humph.”

But nearby Tornado Axe, couldn't bear it and contemptuously snorted: “Heavenly Sword Palace, although it has also occupied one of the top ten

Caves, but if compared with those three big forces, it's not even close to them."

But this statement ticked Hai Tang off, she heard that and immediately retorted with sarcasm: "But still always much better than the wild and wandering solitary soul of yours."

"Bah, that's bullshit, can you make your Heavenly Sword Palace come and rescue you now?"

Tornado Axe contemptuously said.

"You!"

She got pissed off, and angrily stretched her hand, forming a fist and waved towards Tornado Axe, but nothing happened. Because their void, semi-transparent soul intersected with each other and didn't have a mutual touch, exactly like the blue smoke punched spatially, in general.

"Shut up, stop you two."

Ye Feng shouted loudly, making them immediately close their mouths.

The present he had very clearly understood that the best opportunity of any matter in the martial arts world. The reason why he had left those two, naturally because he wanted them to corroborate each other, so as to avoid lies and misleading facts, but without letting them quarrel.

"Hai Tang, you speak first, if there is anything incorrect in your statement, then Tornado Axe can go ahead and supplement with his point. Anyway, in the end, only one of you will leave behind, while the other will be exterminated. And on what basis that would happen, for that you need to pay attention towards your own words."

Ye Feng said that and motioned her to carry on.

Upon hearing that, Hai Tang's soul suddenly shuddered with fear, and she immediately began to explain honestly about the things related to the martial arts world, like Tang Clan, Taiji Palace, Long Clan's relative strength, and so on.

On the one hand, Ye Feng was listening to her carefully, while on the

other, he also kept on recording all important information in his mind, so that if in the future he bumped into these details ever, then he could refer to these data mentioned by Hai Tang.

“Perhaps brother Ye, there is something you still don’t know.”

When Hai Tang said that, immediately Tornado Axe shot a glance at her and said aloud : “Tang Clan is that Clan where your mother belongs to. But this fact hasn’t been brought into the light by this seductive attractive woman so far, naturally, she must be scheming something.”

“Huh?”

Ye Feng heard that and immediately gawked.

Was his mother still alive? Was it really true that the people of Tang Clan were considered as one of the three big forces of the martial arts world?

“Nonsense, in those days, since Tang Clan couldn’t afford to lose their honour, so they already had expelled Tang Qingling long back .....

All of a sudden Hai Tang’s anger burst out and she set up the rebuttal, however, after reaching halfway, suddenly she realised that Ye Feng was also there, constantly listening to her. This thought trembled her heart out and she immediately put a full stop in her mouth, while looking at him frightenedly.

“My mother had been expelled from Tang Clan? Why didn’t you mention that earlier?”

Burning with anger, Ye Feng wrinkled his eyebrows, probably now he knew a little about the matter, that his mother was called Tang Qingling. However, since she got married to his playboy father Ye Yunfei, so, she really made her entire Clan hit by a huge embarrassment, accompanied by a sudden fall of its reputation.

However, such a thing happened, still, Tang Qingling was expelled from her own Clan, could it be that Tang Clan was also extremely weak? If this thing had taken place in the World of the Immortals involving an influencing Clan, then instead of kicking his mother out of her Clan, they

would have already extinguished Long Clan in return! Of course, there was a terrifically huge gap between the World of the Immortals and this martial arts world, perhaps Tang Clan also didn't necessarily have anything to be afraid of .....

"I was afraid that brother Ye will get angry."

Hai Tang hastily piled up a charming smile on her face.

"Where is my mother now?"

Ye Feng asked.

"This .....I really still don't know about this ..... .."

She replied meticulously, since she was very much scared of the thought, that out of anger, Ye Feng might extinguish her.

"One more question, ten years ago, a visitor swordsman had shown up and had created a huge massacre in Yanjing city, by slaughtering dozens of people in a tweak. Do you have any idea who that person was?"

Ye Feng frowned as he asked that, since he wanted to draw out the identity of Scar's personal enemy.

(Lastvoice : This swordsman was the one who had caused scar on Scar's face.)

"That person is ..... my teacher's younger brother, his name is Situ Zangdao, but ever since the country has been sealed off, he hasn't shown up ....."

Although Hai Tang answered that a bit hesitatingly, but her heart suddenly felt a cold shiver, as she thought that that did by any chance Ye Feng also have grudge against her teacher's younger brother, Situ Zangdao?

"Got it."

Ye Feng nodded his head and conveniently waved his hand to dispose of her soul!

But, as soon as Hai Tang saw that, her complexion instantaneously



changed into a surprised and virulent look. She didn't even get a second to say anything and her void, semi-transparent soul suddenly turned into the blue smoke, and finally completely dissipated!

If Ye Feng hadn't obtained Asura Tactics before, then perhaps he would have kept her a bit longer, and would have slowly interrogated her to make her vomit out about the core technique of Heavenly Sword Palace, along with other martial arts techniques. However now, he was totally disinclined, since he had already grabbed such an excellent Asura Tactics now, so he didn't need to know Heavenly Sword Palace's Core Technique anymore!

Moreover, Heavenly Sword Palace was kind of an abnormal school, if one would practice its modified Core Technique, then obviously it wouldn't have any good result.

Afterwards, he turned conveniently towards Tornado Axe, to also exterminate his soul!

However, on seeing that, Tornado Axe immediately turned furious and shouted out loud: "Bastard! You didn't keep your words!"

He hadn't finished speaking yet, and suddenly his entire void soul was dispersed by Ye Feng, turning him into the blue smoke and then he instantly dissipated!

Ye Feng lightly sneered, keeping words? As for the evil person like Hai Tang and Tornado Axe, was it really needed to keep words? He wanted to dispose them of, so as to avoid future troubles. However, prior to extinguishing them, he wanted to squeeze some more information out of their mouth .....

After done dealing with them, he shifted his attention towards his injury. Therefore, he cast Holy Cure Technique, and soon a touch of golden light finally shone from his hands.

The suppression effect of the NSA's arteries gun, finally completely vanished!

As per his plan, at first, he took the Black Jar of Souls and established a

short conversation with those two souls. Afterwards, he used Holy Cure Technique and quickly treated his burn injury which was on his back. Thereafter, he went into the bathroom, all relieved, he finally took a bath comfortably.

After finished bathing, he took a Lingshi out from the cabinet, which he had found through his thorough two weeks search in the Changbai Mountains, as his only achievement. Now, as per him, the time had finally arrived to let Su Menghan absorb its spiritual energy.

She should be able to achieve three years Cultivation at one fell swoop, shouldn't she?

Some time before, Ye Feng had inspected her meridians, although they didn't have thoroughly expanded, but were still more than enough to accommodate three years Cultivation.

Holding that Lingshi in his hand, he hastily went upstairs. Besides, after bathing, Su Menghan was also waiting for him.

## Chapter 139 - The Midnight Thief

---

Wearing the night clothes, when Ye Feng went upstairs and pushed open the door to enter the bedroom, at that time, he was already aware that Su Menghan hadn't fallen asleep yet.

"Girl get up and absorb this Lingshi first, afterwards go back to sleep again."

Holding Lingshi in his hands, while passing through the door, Ye Feng said that. Although it was already too late, but since he had already noticed it earlier that this little girl had been totally incapable of protecting herself today, and just because of that, he had gone through serious anxiety all day round. So ultimately he decided that she should start this absorption process as soon as possible. And it is rightly said-the sooner, the better.

If she would have three years Cultivation, then he could easily teach her Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace, so that if by any chance, she bumped into any dangerous situation, and felt that this situation was far from good, so she should better escape, then in that case, her escape would be much easier with the help of this technique.

"Eh?"

She heard the sound and instantly understood that Ye Feng had entered the door, which made her even more nervous than before. Instantaneously her whole body shrank inside the quilt, only revealing a pure face, while a pair of her nimble and resourceful eyes strangely stared at Ye Feng.

"Here."

He tossed that small Lingshi towards her and then wanted to leave the room, but right then he gave a second thought and pondered that this girl, could she absorb the spiritual energy of this Lingshi on her own?

As expected, she really stretched her hand out and caught the Lingshi firmly. However, panic-stricken, with somewhat baffled expression, she gazed at that small piece of stone. Although he wanted to make her absorb the spiritual energy of this small Lingshi, but for her, the point was, how to absorb it?

Could it be that it should be eaten up?

On seeing her being all perplexed, Ye Feng couldn't help but helplessly turn around to come back to her: "Come, hold it."

He spoke, as he sat on the quilt and supported her to sit and set out the process. In the meantime, he also explored inside her body, to attract her Zhenqi and set her meridians into motion, so that her meridians could start revolving rapidly following the path of the Star Tomb Tactics. Then only he would let her start the rhythmic accumulation of the spiritual energy, while holding the Lingshi in her hands.

At this point of time, suddenly, Su Menghan was drawn close and embraced by him, which turned her face bright red with embarrassment, as if red clouds were floating all over her face. Besides, her thoughts had also become all wild, leaving her completely helpless, as if she didn't even know where her own thoughts were running.

"First, quick absorption, then the revolution of your Zhenqi by following the path of Star Tomb Tactics."

Ye Feng quickly noticed her sudden changing expression and felt little funny, therefore promptly urged her one.

On the other side, Su Menghan wasn't that stupid, she quickly took it as a reminder by Ye Feng. As a result, she promptly reacted and exerted her full strength to stimulate the movement of Core Dan as per the method of the Star Tomb Tactics. Gradually, she began the absorption of the spiritual energy of the Lingshi into her body, simultaneously kept on rapidly revolving her meridians like how Ye Feng had instructed her. Ultimately, after a short while, her Core Dan transformed into Zhenqi!

But in this whole absorption process, her cheeks had already turned red, and she was being very restless. However, because of the rapid

promotion of her Cultivation, she could also clearly feel that her body was probably getting hotter now, even her heart had also started to stir restlessly.

“Concentrate on that a bit more.”

Ye Feng said that, however, he couldn't bear anymore but swallow his saliva.

He just lowered his head and the thing which appeared before his eyes was Su Menghan's beautiful neckline, peeping out from her loose pink nightgown. Apart from that, those two groups of her snow white mountain peaks, which were also squeezing out a deep ravine, quite beautifully, also appeared to him quite alluring.

Her light and delicate fragrance had already made him totally capricious to the extent that he was almost unable to control himself anymore.

“It seems like it's dead now.”

After a short while, Su Menghan whispered, as she could notice that the dark green coloured Lingshi which she had in her hand, had completely lost its lustre and had turned into an ordinary stone now.

However now, she could clearly feel the changes in her body, as if Zhenqi in her meridians had become more solid. Didn't that mean, if she encountered any danger now, then she would be now able to run faster?

“It's dead now, just throw it away.”

Indifferently he said that, then turned over his body and directly pushed her down into the flexible bedding. Then he quickly climbed onto her, tightly pressing her under his body.

“Ah, what are you doing!”

Seeing this sudden change in Ye Feng's behaviour, she exclaimed aloud, as she felt that a pair of thief's hands had suddenly slipped into her clothes, which not only startled her but also gave her a scare.

“I'm afraid you might have danger at night, so let's sleep together.”

Ye Feng solemnly said.

“How come there would be danger, the biggest danger is you, a big pervert, a coloured wolf .....

Her voice seemed very tiny like mosquitoes, her black and bright long hair, which was there around her shoulders before, was now spread all over the pink pillow, making her glossy red face appear conspicuously fresh and pure.

Just a moment ago when Ye Feng was taking a bath, at that time she had been struggling a lot in her mind for a long time thinking that in case Ye Feng would come to her with that naughty intention, then what should she do? Did she want to revolt?

She had pondered over this point for a long time, and finally drew the conclusion that she shouldn't resist and let nature take its course, by forgetting about everything. Moreover, she had a very ample reason to jump to this conclusion, and that was, first, even if she wanted to resist, but could she really resist this? Second, Ye Feng shared his most important secret with her about him being an Immortal Cultivator, just because he had a blind trust on her.

Since the relationship between these two had already been so intimate, so a little more intimacy wouldn't matter at all.....

At this moment, her beautiful captivating eyes were tightly closed, while her long eyelashes were slightly quivering. Softly, she raised her head, as if she wanted to reveal her snow-white long and beautiful nape of the neck, which all of a sudden seduced Ye Feng and became his first target place for kissing.

By now, her heart, which was already bubbling up with intense passion, started beating heavily. She was already very nervous, and now she could also clearly feel the temperature of Ye Feng's fingertip on her body, which was constantly transmitting a strange feeling throughout her body, making her pair of soft and small hands tightly grab the bed sheet.

Their bodies were tightly stuck to each other, as if they had been glued

up, and because of that, the temperature inside the quilt started elevating rapidly.

On seeing that she wasn't resisting at all, Ye Feng's movement started to become more outrageous, as if he got the signal from her side. In any case, this little girl was going to be his woman sooner or later, so what to fear of?

After his rebirth into this modern city, the first person he saw was Su Menghan, in addition, the first person whom he taught Cultivation and who became similar to him, an Immortal Cultivator was also Su Menghan once again. Therefore, it was already doomed that their relationship would be the most intimate type .....

.....

A while later, their cozy and gentle moaning along with their rhythmic breathing, had turned the atmosphere of the room all fiery.

On the one side, after a persistent squally shower, this young girl softly cuddled up in his arms quite smartly and gently, just like the waterfall in general. And her long luxurious hair was spread on the pillow, as if a light fine gauge was exhibiting unique aroma of this young girl.

While on the other side, Ye Feng, cuddling her snow-white shoulders close to him, lightly kissed her forehead.

Simultaneously, she also gently rubbed her body against his and comfortably sank herself into his arms.

In this quiet room, where occasionally the sound of the insects was spreading in from outside the window, as if making the entire room appear more lonesome and quiet, these two people were submerged into their most intimate relationship.

On this day, Ye Feng and Su Menghan, these two people became the most intimate and finally laid the foundation of the relationship between them.

Henceforth, Su Menghan had also become an Immortal Cultivator just like Ye Feng. Now, she was not only able to practice various Immortal

Techniques, but could also easily circulate her Zhenqi within her body as per her desire. Furthermore, now she had the ability to become more formidable presence if compared with a Martial artist.

As for his own woman, Ye Feng wouldn't be certainly parsimonious, only making her also step into the world of an Immortal Cultivator, was enough for him to finally go all the way to the end together with her.

The terminal point of his life and where it would be, Ye Feng didn't have any idea regarding these things.

However, in any event, Su Menghan would definitely accompany him to the end of his journey. She already had become one of those people, who had occupied a great importance in his life.

But at this moment, the thought of her suddenly reminded him of his master.

Actually, he didn't know where his master would be nowadays?

Just like how his master held a huge importance in his previous life, similarly, Su Menghan also had now in this new life of him. Actually, she had already become indispensable to his life. No matter what kind of course he would have in his later life, he could pass through it easily together with her now!

In this pin drop silence of this moonlight night, two love birds were floating in the romantic atmosphere. When Ye Feng, hugging her smooth and soft body in his bosom, finally decided to sleep, exactly then, his Soul Search Technique suddenly proliferated and he found that there was an individual sneaking and trying to climb up the water pipe from outside the wall, evidently wanted to steal things!

“A martial artist? With ten years Cultivation? And on top of that, is a thief who has come to steal things .....

Nowadays in the modern society, burglary had actually become a very common matter. However, this case was a bit peculiar, there was a martial artist, with a decade Cultivation, still was trying to break in and steal! Such case rarely shows up!



## Chapter 140 - The Hapless Thief

---

Now, Ye Feng really wanted to know what those precious things were there in the villa?

And there was only one answer, Ye Clan's Core martial arts techniques and the rare books.

Perhaps because Su Menghan was extremely tired, she quickly fell asleep into Ye Feng's arms. While on the other hand, at this moment, Ye Feng sensed someone and quietly got up, put on his night clothes, cast Invisibility and silently left the bedroom.

That stealthy thief was also dressed in the night clothes and it seemed that he often used to climb up along the water pipe like today. At this time, he suddenly turned towards the second floor's balcony very softly, without making any sound. Besides, his stature was also very covert.

However, unfortunately, he bumped into Ye Feng, who possessed Soul Search Technique. Hence, no matter what covert technique he would use, could never escape from Ye Feng's exploration radar.

Invisible Ye Feng, under the spell of his technique 'Invisibilty', went next to that fellow, and by taking advantage of the faint moonlight, he found this thief had a black hood on his head, had a very slim stature and appeared fairly professional. After looking around cautiously, when that thief didn't notice any danger, he finally went into an action.

Moreover, this guy's agility was also amazing, just in a flash he arrived in front of the bathroom of the second floor, where he observed the surrounding for a moment, and then all of a sudden drew a string of tools out from his waist, so as to break into it.

"The only thing hidden in this bathroom is Ye Clan's Core technique, so as expected the target of this guy is indeed the rare books of Ye Clan?"

Ye Feng thought this in his heart and prepared himself to act any

moment.

With his ten years of Cultivation, coping with a martial artist who also possessed a decade of Cultivation, had always been fairly effortless, let alone this stealth attack of a thief. However, actually Ye Feng didn't want to kill him so quickly, at least he should ask few questions like his motto behind his sudden visit.

Or should he tie him up, and wait for Ye Wentian to come and deal with him?

The plan was pretty good.

Just when that thief was trying to do everything possible to break in, right then Ye Feng threw his foot at his side!

Thud!

Ye Feng's foot severely kicked him in his knees, immediately his kicked leg got broken and he partly knelt on the ground.

"Who!"

Panic-stricken, he looked around helplessly and suddenly his incisive male voice resounded!

His infiltration was already so covert, then how could someone found him? And on top of that, that person also arrived at his side to sneak attack him. Actually, his mind had already ceased working, could it be that Ye Wentian had returned? That was totally impossible! That old man, Ye Wentian, he wasn't in Yanjing presently, was he?

That thief while enduring the pain, tilted his head to look and actually saw a masked man wearing a shirt, looking at him very gloomily.

What the fuck, who this fellow was, wasn't it said that only a senior high school student lived in this villa?

The thief didn't want to think about that yet, promptly he took a tool out and threw it towards Ye Feng's face, at the same time, relying on his another leg, he jumped towards the balcony and after taking 2 to 3 steps, he finally jumped out of the balcony, since he wanted to escape at once!

But unfortunately, Ye Feng's movement was quicker than him, he fended off that tool very conveniently and in an instant arrived at the side of the balcony, where he saw that the thief had already jumped down the balcony, and was about to fall to the ground.

Without further delay, Ye Feng immediately formed a stance and cast out Dragon Claw Hand Technique!

Since he had a decade of Cultivation now, therefore casting this technique wasn't a difficult matter for him anymore. Immediately, his Zhenqi sprang out of his body spatially and took the form of two Dragon Claw Hands. Using those hands, he grabbed the thief in the air, which was immediately followed by a sudden outbreak of his power, and the next moment, he pulled that thief up and flew him back to the balcony. This way he performed a marvellous sight of flying trapeze!

Bang!

With a huge force, his whole body fell down in the balcony and badly knocked against the ground. But things didn't end here, all at once that thief's mind blew away.

"The second layer of Dragon Claw Hand Technique!"

At this moment, the thief was in an inexplicable terror. Since as the matter stood right here in front of him, it was apparent that the old man, Ye Wentian wasn't the only person who had the talent to reach the next level, right?

"Pretty good, so scared of it? Give me the honest confession, who you are and who has sent you here. Then only, I can consider to let you off."

Leaning against the balcony, Ye Feng carefully said.

"I am a nobody, just wanted to earn some extra income ....."

He promptly replied.

"Rubbish, to earn extra money, why would you come here like this?"

Ye Feng glared at him, immediately flung his both hands and displayed Dragon Claw Hand Technique. Immediately, his Zhenqi went out in the

air, in the form of those hands and grabbed the thief once again and threw him down the building! After letting his body freely fall for more than ten meters, he pulled him up once again, like a flying trapeze!

Bang!

The thief had been grasped again and was again thrown heavily in the balcony. As a result, he spat a mouthful of foam. This feeling of suddenly throwing down and then pulling up could absolutely make people enjoy the ultimate pleasure!

“Yes, I saw the list of human arena, actually they have issued the task to obtain Dragon Claw Hand Technique of Ye Clan from this villa, besides Enchanted Volume Technique and Mysterious Mother Sword Technique rare books were also there .....

His enunciation wasn't clear.

“What is this list of the human arena?”

Ye Feng asked.

“The human arena often issues the task, and any martial artist can take up the job and as soon as he completes the task, he gets rewarded for that .....

The thief, putting on a distressed look, said that.

“The things of Ye Clan, how could you also dare to think of a plan, are you tired of living?”

Ye Feng viciously asked.

“It is said that every year today, Ye Wentian leaves the city Yanjing .....

The thief had already submitted to his fate and consequently had confessed everything.

He just wanted to earn some wealth, as for him, it was not at all worthwhile to lose his life for this reason!

The moment Ye Feng heard his words, his bubbles of happiness burst

into his heart. What! Ye Wentian was not in Yanjing? This was a good news ah! Now that the old man was not in the city, then could it still prevent him from going to the East China Sea?

He thought that while carrying that thief in his hands and throwing him into a utility room. Although he wanted to tie him up with a rope, but when he spread his Soul Search Technique, he found that there was no rope available anywhere in this villa, however, it had two iron chains.

“The iron chain is better, hey.”

Ye Feng got the chains and firmly tied him in that utility room. Thereafter, he turned around and left that room. Now, by taking his mask off, he continued to return to the bedroom, so that he could again hug that attractive girl, Su Menghan before falling asleep.

If he hadn't had that sexual intercourse with Su Menghan just a moment ago, then by now, he would have already rushed to the East China Sea to take advantage of Ye Wentian's absence.

What a pity, just for her sake, he couldn't leave here at this moment!

However, he just broke somebody else's body to prevent him from running away, did this make sense?

The poor thief, he was currently iron chained in the utility room, had gotten his one leg broken, although he wanted to cry but had no tears to shed. In this world, was there any other more unfortunate thief than him? At least he hadn't seen such a miserable fellow so far!

.....

While on the other side, at present, Ye Wentian together with Lin Hongchuan, had come to Quyang County at the same night, which was in the south-west area of Yanjing city.

Within the scope of China, apart from those top ten big caves, there were also another thirty-six small caves, as well as seventy-two dwelling places, many of which were some martial arts schools now. Besides, those thirty-six small caves were totally mysterious and were located nearby Quyang County.

Zizen Sword Faction, which was hidden in this mysterious cave near Mt. Hengshan, had now become a well-known martial arts school in today's human arena.

But presently, Ye Wentian, as well as Lin Hongchuan, together arrived at Quyang County, just to meet with another old man.

A teahouse, quiet, beautiful and secluded, where Ye Wentian, crossing his hands behind his back, was standing on the second floor's window and was constantly looking into the distant sky in this dark night, who knew what was going on in his mind currently. Next to him, another old man was also there, with white beard and hair, round face, his stature was all short and stout and had a high temple. Although he was shorter than Ye Wentian in terms of height, but when it came to his imposing manner, Ye Wentian didn't even stand any chance against him!

Lin Hongchuan was all carefree and enjoying the tea which was served by the restaurant owner to calm one's mind.

“Old Tang, want to drink the tea that your daughter makes, but again it is not that easy.”

Lin Hongchuan sighed with emotion as he said: “According to me, you all just move to Yanjing and forget about it.”

“Keke, this matter doesn't need to be raised again.”

The short and stout old man, with round face, coughed : “In those days, I and Qingling really indebted to Zizhen Sword Faction for taking care of us. However now, I am lending a hand to run this teahouse, life is also quite good and peaceful here. Anyways, Old Ye, just a moment ago you said that you have an important matter to inform us, so what is it? ”

By taking his eyes back from the distant sky, Ye Wentian glanced towards Old Tang and Lin Hongchuan, and solemnly said : “Ye Feng practices martial arts.”

These five words barely fell and all of a sudden changed the colour of Old Tang and Lin Hongchuan's face at the same.

Ye Feng could practice martial arts?

Finished, wasn't it like courting death?

## Chapter 141 - Agility Skill Comprehension

---

Lin Hongchuan was about to take a sip of his tea, but right at this moment, he heard those words and all of a sudden his mind was blown away.

Ye Feng could practice the martial arts?

This kid, wasn't he studying? Then, how could he come into the contact with the martial arts field?

He knew merely few details related to Ye Feng's life, such as he was just an ordinary high school student, he not only had made the boss of Heavenly Serpent Gang help him occasionally in carrying out his several tasks, but had also surprisingly never displayed any fear while facing such a ferocious man like him, instead with a lofty temperament he used to deal with him. Interestingly, he had already started practicing the martial arts!

His complexion clouded over all at once.

He had seen before only one side of Ye Feng's life, but still hoped to make his granddaughter Lin Shiqing marry him, now what should be done? Ye Feng had started practicing martial arts, if this news anyhow spread in the world, then immediately various group of personal enemies' and their Clans would start seeking for him, then how should it be handled?

The round-faced old man, Old Tang similarly knitted his eyebrows : "If you are saying so, then do we old decrepit people need to come out of obscurity to take the lead? Old Ye, you handle this matter, absolutely don't let people stir any trouble for him, by the way, how did he get dragged into the world of martial arts?"

"I can't say that."

On the contrary, Ye Wentian was not at all worried, instead somewhat



complacently said : “When did he start practicing martial arts, I don’t know about that. But for me, he went through Ye Clan’s Dragon Claw Hand Technique just once and immediately cast it out, such a great talent he has, unique in the world, unrivalled! ”

“What!”

Immediately the facial expression of both people, Old Tang and Lin Hongchuan simultaneously tremendously changed.

“Are these words real?”

Old Tang himself had been a great martial artist since ages, therefore compared to Lin Hongchuan, he had a clearer idea about the difficulty level of Dragon Claw Hand Technique. However, what was this? Ye Feng looked at it once and grabbed it instantly, what was this talent? Literally, in the martial arts world, it was such a talent which could hardly be seen in a hundred years of period!

“Do you think that I, Ye Wentian can still lie?”

Ye Wentian proudly said, since his grandson was flamboyant now, which naturally brightened up his grandfather’s complexion.

“If such being the case, then we old and decrepit people should really need to go into action.”

After pondering over this issue for a moment, the round-faced old man lightly said that.

Old Tang, Tang Xuefeng was equally famous and formidable like Ye Wentian in the martial arts world because of his profound Cultivation. Although twenty years ago he had suffered a serious inflicted loss, but still his twenty years of training didn’t go into vain, his strength hadn’t receded a bit, instead he could still advance into the first-class master rank.

Even now, just a little age of people of the martial arts world knew that Ye Feng’s mother Tang Qingling was the daughter of Tang Xuefeng. Twenty years ago, when Ye Clan was totally wiped out, this father and daughter then had lodged under another person’s roof and had also

developed a really good relationship with Zizhen Sword Faction.

“Anyway, my grandson can’t let people bully or humiliate him.”

Tang Xuefeng eyes suddenly revealed a hint of coldness.

“Hey, fortunately, only he has bullied people, not other people have bullied him so far.”

Ye Wentian smiled : “However, if his identity as a martial arts practitioner is somehow exposed to the world, the trouble will start attacking him rightaway, for that you and I are required to do proper preparation beforehand.”

“And if the critical moment really arrives, I will make the people of Taiji Palace also make their move.”

Nearby Lin Hongchuan said that at a moderate pace.

“All right Old Lin.”

Tang Xuefeng stared at him as he said : “Your human sentiment, no need to actually say that you will make Taiji Palace get into action, your Lin Clan has merely a cooperative relationship with them .....

“Still, no matter what, we ought to always attempt.”

Lin Hongchuan smiled while shaking his head, and continued : “That boy Ye Feng, whom I have also seen as my granddaughter’s husband and whom I have a liking to, if I still can’t help him, then whom I will be able to help in my lifetime?”

The detail conversation continued among these three old men all night. Besides talking about their old days, their whole discussion was pinpointing Ye Feng and the matter related to him. The key question was, the time when Ye Feng being a martial artist got exposed, then undoubtedly Tang Xuefeng would go out to protect him, during that time what should be done with Tang Qingling?

This question was the most baffling one for these old people, after a long discussion, they finally figured out a way .....

.....

Yanjing, Qingfeng Park.

When the first wisp of morning light knocked the window and peeped in, Su Menghan comfortably moved her body, raised her hand and touched the bed, but suddenly felt empty.

“Ye Feng?”

All of a sudden, she partly sat up, and looked around panic-stricken, where did Ye Feng vanish?

“What happened?”

A familiar voice immediately rang, it was actually Ye Feng.

She then noticed that he had been in the bedroom all along, but since he had woken up first, so he started reading those four wire-binding books.

He turned around, and the next moment, the snow white and smooth shoulder of the young girl caught his eyes, making him unable to bear but recall the last night, when they were inside the quilt completely wrapped, along with the delicate touch of this young girl's fragrant body .....

On seeing his eyes stuck on her body, her cheeks reddened at once, and she hastily retracted the bedding : “Don't look this side, or better you go out first, and let me wear my clothes, ok?”

“What, you are being bashful?”

He chuckled and put away those four books, went up to the side and gently pinched her tender cheeks, afterwards left the room.

This made her blush right up to her ears, but when she saw his rear view while he was leaving the room, a touch of sweetness emerged in her mind rightaway. From now on, this man was the one whom she would depend upon throughout her life .....

He stepped out of the bedroom, shook his head so as to shrug this sweet and gentle scenery off his mind.

After his three steps down the stairs, he again continued browsing

through the book – Ghost Shadow Soul Step. With the help of this rare book, he could actually comprehend how to break through the second layer of Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace up to some extent!

Ghost Shadow Soul Step, if coordinated with Asura Tactics' agility technique, it could certainly make people instantaneously erupt with an extremely quick speed, but it couldn't be sustained longer.

This reminded him of the World of the Immortals, once when Su Feiying had displayed Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace's second layer, during then, in that fast running process, she could similarly instantly broke out with a lightning fast speed. However then, unfortunately, Ye Feng didn't get enough time to comprehend this second layer.

“This meridian operation line, so long as both sides are integrated .....

Ye Feng rolled through the pages of Ghost Shadow Soul Step's book and quickly patted his head, as if the divine miraculous light flashed through his mind.

Without wasting any further precious second, he started the revolution of his Dantian rightaway, soon making his Zhenqi stream down into his legs and fill his several remote acupuncture points up. And the next moment, a terrific eruption!

Swish!

Just in an instant, he ran all the way out of the villa's front door, leaving behind a row of blurred afterimages! This instantaneous eruption of his speed had surprisingly hit hundred meters in just two seconds rightaway, which was twice faster than the speed of his usual Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace!

“Such frightening eruption, although it can last only for a few seconds, but still it can be a huge lifesaver at the crucial moment.”

All of a sudden, his mood piqued up, and the reason of this sudden mood delectation was the mere thought that how easily he comprehended the second layer of Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace. Besides this, the higher the level of his Cultivation, the longer the duration of his eruption speed. As long as he had the lightning fast

speed, he would have enough capital on any occasion, since the onset and retreat would have the leeway.

Presently, his eruption speed was already way faster than that perverted man, Li Hua and the armed escort, Zhui Hun. Moreover, in the martial arts world, already classified as the first class martial artist, that Mt. Tianzhu's old man, Huang Peirong could be equally matched with Ye Feng's current speed.

Possessing such a great Immortal Technique – Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace already, there was really no essentiality to practice Ghost Shadow Soul Step. However this skill if coordinated with Asura Tactics, then it seemed to show better results.

At this moment, he finally thought to return to the bedroom so as to continue studying the another three books.

This Asura Tactics was the primary martial arts technique, in which inner qi used to involve extreme blood, accompanied with enormous overbearing. However after passing through the transformation process made by Ye Feng, it's violent bloody part was extracted, but it doubled the overbearing part, which became fairly suitable for Scar to practice Cultivation.

Furthermore, if 'Thousand Miles Chasing Soul Blade Technique' was combined with Ghost Shadow Soul Step, then it could have a miraculous effect as well.

Asura Suppressing Soul Sound Wave, this was a bit less alluring. In case it wasn't within the realm of assigning away inner qi from the body, then this skill was undoubtedly a complete waste. However, if it fell within the realm where Zhenqi could be assigned away from the body, then as the title page actually hinted "a roar can shake the yellow spring," seemingly was quite domineering.

(Lastvoice : "Yellow springs", in Chinese culture, this term often refers to the underworld, a place where spirits of the dead live.)

Ye Feng decided to learn this 'Asura Suppressing Soul Sound Wave', perhaps it would turn out very useful during any critical moment.

However, as for the knife technique, he was not even the least bit interested in grasping it.

These four rare books would be handed over to Scar for peremptory action and he would have to immediately find the time to give it a go, after all this was treated as the beginning to create his own force.

Ye Feng was occupied in his own intense thought process, exactly then, suddenly the sound of telephone bell rang in the villa.

At first, Ye Feng didn't care, but upstairs, soon Su Menghan picked up the phone: "Hello?"

"Hello, may I ask to call Ye Feng on the phone?"

A somewhat unexpected female voice passed through, on the other side, Ye Feng, using Soul Search technique, also heard the voice of the other side and immediately recognized her, actually, it turned out to be – Long Wan'er!

Doomed, actually letting Su Menghan receive the phone call of Long Wan'er .....

## Chapter 142 - East China Sea's Coral King

---

The impression Ye Feng held of Su Menghan all along was she was the kind of girl who still relatively got jealous of other girls quite easily. That was the reason why he couldn't bring himself to openly share the matter related to Long Wan'er with her, and just waited for the propitious time to ripe.

However now, Su Menghan answered the phone call which was actually made by Long Wan'er, this .....

“Excuse me, although I tried to hit his personal number first but couldn't get through, therefore I was forced to dial your family's fixed phone number.”

The voice of Long Wan'er sounded as sweet and melodious as an oriole, accompanied with a light and lively tone, apparently, she was in a pretty good mood.

As for Ye Feng's cellular phone, last night, in order to prevent Lin Clan from tracking him down, he had intentionally thrown it in the Weiming Lake. Therefore, naturally, no one could get through to him. And so far as how Long Wan'er knew the fixed phone number of their villa, it was not at all strange and surprising, since it was already crystal clear that by using the influence of Long Clan, drawing out a number was not a difficult job for her.

Perhaps because of these words “your family”, Su Menghan turned a little embarrassed: “Ok, I call him over the phone.”

“Thank you.”

Immediately Long Wan'er's laughter passed through the phone.

Soon, from downstairs, Ye Feng answered the phone: “Hello?”

“Hey little foe, did you ever think of me?”

Long Wan'er perceived that Su Menghan would have certainly hung up the phone by now, so she couldn't help but lower her voice, and said just like a spoiled brat in general.

"Think of you... where are you right now?"

Suddenly, a warm and sweet sensation filled his heart, as he thought that this girl, how brisk and adorable she was.

"I am still at home."

By suppressing her voice, Long Wan'er continued : "Look, I am under strict supervision, can't run away..... However about the East China Sea, recently, again a news has become like a fire in the jungle, about the emergence of the Big Coral King in the East China Sea, which is about to mature soon."

"Big Coral King?"

Ye Feng felt a little strange.

"Hmm, actually this matter has already become a bubbling uproar in the entire martial arts world."

To give a detailed explanation, she continued : "It is said that the Big Coral King can increase one's Cultivation up to five years at just one fell swoop. Currently, various forces are guarding it, waiting for two weeks to pass, until the Big Coral King matures. Really it has caused such a huge commotion there."

Half a month, this time was actually just around the corner!

Ye Feng thought that regarding the other college entrance examination, he didn't need to worry about. However, he didn't get any information about his master, Su Feiying so far, whether she would still be there or not.....

"Isn't there any news concerning my master?"

He asked straightforwardly.

"The last time someone caught sight of her is one week ago, when her chartered ship advanced towards the sea. Ever since that day, she has



never appeared again.”

she was well-informed since she knew that Ye Feng really cared about this matter, therefore she carried a discreet inquiry of this matter in detail.

“Hmm.”

Although Ye Feng nodded his head, but her statement left his heart piled up with lots of doubts, and one of them was, why did Su Feiying advance towards the sea? Moreover, such a long time had rolled on, but still, she didn't show up, did she encounter any accident .....

He shook his head and kicked this thought out of his mind, for the time being, then he asked : “Where is your house?”

“Why are you asking this?”

She heard that and immediately turned a bit tensed : “I'm fine now, you don't need to come. Even if you try to come, certainly you won't be able to leave then. By the way, don't you have to go to the East China Sea to look for your master?”

“Umm, just believe me.”

Ye Feng solemnly said : “I'll defeat your father inevitably one day.”

“I believe ..... Well, I'm hanging up, someone is coming.”

All of a sudden she lowered her voice and abruptly disconnected the phone.

Through the microphone “beep” sound transmitted, making his train of thoughts drift towards that night when he was in the ancient tomb along with Long Wan'er, and suddenly his heart filled with desire for power. As long as he could triumph over Long Mo'ran, then the trivial Long Clan would absolutely be incapable of doing anything to prevent him from getting together with Long Wan'er!

As for Long Mo'ran, having less than sixty years of Cultivation currently was not something which could be easily overlooked. In addition, his talent was also incredibly awesome, as he had already

gotten expertise in the third layer of Romantic Sword.

To vanquish Long Mo'ran, the crucial point for Ye Feng was not Cultivation, rather it was Immortal Techniques. All he needed to do was to attain two decades of Cultivation, then after not only his comprehension would be at peak, but his level would also be soaring into the sky. The greater the comprehension, the higher the level of his Immortal Techniques, then triumphing over the opposite party wouldn't remain a big problem for him anymore!

And to achieve this success, the big Coral King in the East China Sea, was certainly a propitious opportunity.

During this half a month period, he would give his all round the clock, to broaden his meridians. This way, he could raise the upper limit of his Cultivation to about thirteen or fourteen years, so that once he obtained the big Coral King, he could easily enhance his Cultivation upto fifteen years at one fell swoop.

And for that, he must obtain the big Coral King at all cost!

Although if compared with the martial arts world, his Cultivation would be certainly treated as on the lower side, but with the help of Invisibility and other Immortal Techniques, it wasn't necessary that he would certainly fail in getting his hands on the big Coral King.

On the other side, after thinking for a moment, Su Menghan already well-dressed walked downstairs.

“How about your pain, does it still hurt?”

Ye Feng came around her and squeezed her into his arms, as he asked that with full of concern.

“Last night it was ..... but not now.”

Immediately, her complexion turned as she blushed, she couldn't help but think of last night's scene, which made her heart fill with bashful thoughts.

At that auspicious moment, she finally became a woman from a girl

.....

This guy was really so hard last night, he was such a big colored wolf, a pervert ..... although she thought that in her mind, but fortunately she had also turned into an Immortal Cultivator, and because of that her body recovered quite faster, making her all pains and uneasiness vanish, which she had the last night.

“Well, now I’ll teach you two things, the first one is broadening the meridians, and the second is an agility technique, Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace.....”

Ye Feng smiled and said that, as he touched her head gently. About the revolution of meridians and Zhenqi, Su Menghan was completely a layman. And now that he wanted to make her learn how to broaden her meridians, as well as Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace, naturally it was not something which could be achieved in a short period of time.

Therefore Ye Feng took advantage of the time while they were going out together, and started explaining things. Besides this, she had that legendary luminous pearl in her side bag, which Ye Feng had obtained from the ancient tomb. He wanted to show this to Ou B and ask him to sell it at a good price!

Today, it would be Scar who would personally drove them to the school. When these two people boarded on the car, Ye Feng immediately handed the book of Asura Tactics over to him, along with the other three rare martial arts books.

“Asura Tactics is the foundation of the another three techniques. Basically, Ghost Shadow Soul Step will be the technique you will mainly rely on, while ‘Thousand Miles Chasing Soul Blade Technique’ is gonna be the auxiliary knife technique. As for ‘Asura Suppressing Soul Sound Wave’, naturally it is also an interesting one, so you can also learn it.”

Ye Feng added further : “Do keep in mind, in case any problem pops out, must give me a call rightaway .....

“You have lost your cell phone.”

Nearby standing Su Menghan gently reminded him.

“Well, then you can call on Menghan’s number.”

With somewhat awkwardness, Ye Feng said : “Scar, you arrange a cell phone for me again, but with the same original number.”

“Understood, elder brother Ye.”

At this moment, after receiving these books, Scar was already in the seven heaven out of excitement.

The rare martial arts books were with him, so that meant he could really start practising Cultivation! It seemed like following Ye Feng all along was indeed the right choice he had taken.

He glanced at Ye Feng, as well as sitting right next to him, Su Menghan, from the demeanour and appearance this pure beauty had currently, didn’t it seem that she had already been eaten up? However, wasn’t elder brother Ye and Miss Lin’s engagement had already been set?

Well, Scar quickly tossed this thought out of his head, since he knew that such an overbearing man like elder brother Ye, how could he possibly have just one woman?

As soon as he stepped on the accelerator, silver BMW paced up and galloped towards Yanjing Senior High School.

In the car, Ye Feng inquired randomly about Su Menghan’s grandmother’s case, and Scar also coordinated with him, and explained everything smoothly, quite clearly. The trial was scheduled after the college entrance examination and when the time would arrive, Su Xinchang would appear in the court to testify.

Ye Feng originally thought that this was just a trivial thing, however, he was totally wrong. The moment they set their foot in their school, shockingly they found that this matter had actually blotted out the sky!

This matter that Su Menghan had sued Xie Clan’s siblings had already spread throughout the school. The reason why, they barely got off the car, and several people, standing around the school entrance, started

pointing at her.

From their expression and conversation, it didn't take long to Ye Feng to understand what they were thinking. The daughter of a disgraced entrepreneur had actually filed a case against Yanjing's Xie Clan, this was indeed a wishful thinking, wasn't it?

Even though she got close to Ye Feng, but in the eyes of other, Ye Feng was totally dependent upon his grandfather, and had already his marriage set with Miss Lin, then didn't it mean he was just a playboy? Moreover, Su Menghan not only provoked Xie Clan, but had also snatched Miss Lin's man away from her, didn't she also court her death?

Almost everyone was secretly feeling sorry for this Xiaohua.

*(Lastvoice : Xiaohua means the prettiest girl in the school.)*

## Chapter 143 - A Slap On The Face

---

Along with Su Menghan, Ye Feng barely entered the school gate and suddenly his eyebrows got all wrinkled up.

This kind of matter, how did it get unfurled in the public? Indubitably, there would be certainly someone in the dark who publicised this matter, and his purpose would be definitely to discredit Su Menghan, but who could it be?

“Small Bee!”

All the way running from the school gate, Ou B came pursuing him, however on seeing him and Su Menghan walking together and exhibiting an aura of intimacy, he shouted hastily.

Immediately Ye Feng turned back and saw a familiar white hair youth running towards them, it was Ou B whom he was actually looking for.

“You really arrived at the right moment, there is something I want to ask.”

Ye Feng grabbed and pulled him to the wayside, simultaneously, a bit cautiously, he swept all around and then whispered: “Why does this matter that Menghan has filed a case against Xie people, get spread among the people?”

On listening this word “Menghan”, which was an intimate form of addressing her, Ou B immediately shifted his glance towards the school beauty and couldn’t control himself from wondering that these two people, hadn’t their relationship probably become a lot closer than before?

Naturally, he wouldn’t have any idea how many things had happened last night.

“Neither I know where does this come from, but very early in the

morning, someone had dropped a short message to several groups, making the whole school know about it.”

Ou B said in a scolding manner : “You Bastard, in short, now the situation is very disadvantageous to you.”

“Relax, nothing will happen.”

Ye Feng’s eyes flashed with coldness : “I just don’t know who that particular someone is, but if I catch him, will surely make him know my real power and ferociousness.”

“Well, Small Bee, I m already clear about your ability, but the crucial point is we don’t know exactly who is involved in this propaganda .....

Ou B shook his head, and while changing the subject, said : “Oh, by the way, yesterday you were with that beautiful lady of Lin Clan .....

However after reaching half the way, suddenly he realised that Su Menghan was still there standing next to them, which made him zip his mouth instantly.

“Keke, excuse me, oh that’s right, literally speaking, she wanted to be my elder sister. So now the situation is like this, she is like my elder sister.”

Ye Feng coughed and a bit embarrassedly said, then held Su Menghan’s hand. Also, he said that just to make her feel at ease, let alone it was also the fact.

Su Menghan’s fingers were now in his palm gently held, which all of a sudden gave birth to a sweet smile that gradually crept over her pure face, making him feel relieved that this small girl wasn’t angry at all.

“Oh boy, I, Ouge is with you, my friend.”  
(Lastvoice : Here Ouge stands for Ou elder brother.)

Ou B threw a mischievous smile, as he patted his shoulder and praised him loudly. Accepting Miss Lin as his elder sister? This was really good, this way not only he prevented Xiaohua, Su Menghan from getting sad, but also preserved a big powerful supporter, Lin Clan in his favour!

“Oh, that’s right, this thing, while getting back home, let your Dad have a look at it, so that he can determine its genuine value. Besides, also ask him to help me sell this thing.”

Ye Feng said that, as he unwrapped the packet and made Ou B look inside it, where he had kept the legendary luminous pearl.

Ou B stretched forward to take a look and surprisingly the sight turned his eyes wide open at once, such a big legendary luminous pearl? To one’s surprise, it was actually thrice bigger than a size of an adult’s fist, besides, the picture of two dragons was also carved on its surface, apparently making it look like a very extraordinary stuff.

Even by his eyes, he could see that the value of this huge pearl would be at least more than five million. In case an auction was done, then extracting tens millions wouldn’t be impossible!

“There is still a good news, that good for nothing youth Lin Xiuwen turned into a retard yesterday evening suddenly.”

Ye Feng smiled.

“What?”

By this time, Ou B hadn’t drawn himself out from the shock of this luminous pearl, and once again his mind was blown away by this news.

Lin Clan’s Sanshao became a retard? He still remembered the incident which had taken place last time in Oushi Antique Store, when his father reluctantly suffered a triple compensation. Indubitably then, his personal attendant would have purposely crumbled the antique, and virtually trapped his father to compensate them, but why did he compensate?

Such a rampant, arrogant and despotic playboy turned into a retard, this news would absolutely turn anyone deleted. Actually, it was indeed an exciting matter, worth setting off firecrackers to celebrate!

“How can he become a retard?”

The only problem was, Ou B couldn’t think through it, just guessed that could it be that this good and justifiable thing was done by Ye Feng?



“Don’t misunderstand.”

Ye Feng looked at him incredulously and somewhat puzzled he wondered, although he always used his sword to strike and kill people right on the spot, but could it possible for him to descend to such a low level where he would like messing up with people’s brains just to trouble them?

“Perhaps it’s true “a life of sin ends in sorrow sooner or later”. He might have done lots of wicked things, that’s why not even the God could stand to continue watching him.”

Ye Feng waved: “This thing, we will discuss it later, I hope you won’t mind, let’s walk fast rightnow, we have classes to attend, you remember, right?”

If he wanted to pass the entrance examination for Yanjing University, then on that ground, his current level was certainly considered as far from enough. Even in Yanjing senior high School, he awfully scored and got the first rank from the bottom in his class, therefore getting admission in Yanjing University was like a distant dream for him currently.

Naturally, for Ye Feng, there was nothing like pressure, because as per his current memory, he could pass the university entrance exam now in a tweak.

The short conversation among these three people ended soon and they walked together towards the classroom.

They left the stairs and advanced towards the classroom’s door. However right at this time, they saw something at the end of the corridor, which simultaneously made these three people gawked at once, why so many people were gathered there? Moreover, a lot of people didn’t look like students, could it be that some kind of troublesome situation had popped up there?

“It’s her?”

Ye Feng proliferated his Soul Search Technique and sensed someone,

making him frown rightaway.

Actually blocking the doorway of the classroom, those two Xie Clan's siblings Xie Min and Xie Chengye were there, although the others Xie people were also there casually dressed, but Ye Feng recognised them at a single glance. Besides them, those soldiers from the previous time, who had blocked him in Jingcheng restaurant, were also there, they were actually the subordinates of Xie Chengye.

Again asking for trouble?

Ye Feng snorted coldly and tightly clasped Su Menghan's hand, then strode to go over there.

"Hey, hey Small Bee, don't go over there first, what if they will be actually seeking you for troubles? Let me go and have a look first what's the matter....."

Panic-stricken, Ou B outstretched his hand and tried to stop them by blocking their way.

"Rest assured, nothing will happen."

Ye Feng could easily mark that his face was clouded over with genuine worry and concern, which really deeply touched his heart. However, in order to deal with these little vagrants, his friend Ye Feng was also not ready to flinch back.

Despite Ou B's all efforts and advises, Ye Feng along with Su Menghan, soon arrived at the classroom's door!

"Look, Ye Feng and Su Menghan have arrived."

"Really arrived, this time, everything will be done for, Xie people, hurry up and come to the door."

"Should we inform the teacher about this?"

"Inform your ass, even if the principal arrives, can he really dare to touch these Xie people?"

The students around the classroom's door were whispering about this matter, and their talks were easily heard by Ye Feng using his Soul

Search Technique.

While at this moment, Xie Min and Xie Chengye simultaneously turned around and suddenly the sight of Ye Feng and Su Menghan appeared before their eyes, making their eyes all light up.

“Oh, finally arrived, the college entrance examination is almost around the corner, Ye Feng you are still together with this slutty girl. Ain’t you afraid that you might fail in the examination?”

Xie Min immediately came out and by putting on a contemptuous look on her face, she directly set her face towards those two. Her whole body was bedecked with jewels and loaded with beautiful makeup. She had gotten such a powerful back supporter that not even Ye Feng could imagine, therefore, again she became all swaggered up.

“Wasn’t the last lesson enough for you?”

Without further ado, Ye Feng also stepped ahead and engraved a slap on her face.

Snapped!

As for his movements, the people present on the scene, nobody could see anything, not even his movement, until Xie Chengye and his subordinates reacted. After being slapped, immediately Xie Min’ cheek turned red and swelled up. But the interesting part didn’t end here, a mere slap held such a huge power, which threw her several steps back and she heavily got crashed into the crowd.

Actually, a slap on her face could send her flying!

“Whish!”

The surrounding students immediately burst into an uproar, this guy Ye Feng, barely got the support of Lin Clan and had really already turned so arrogant and blunt altogether!

“You dare hit my elder sister! Now no one can appear to save you!”

On seeing that, Xie Chengye clenched his teeth and without any hesitation, he pulled up his sleeves, directed his subordinates and a row

of seven-eight well-trained soldiers, suddenly rushed towards Ye Feng!

## Chapter 144 - A Ruthlessly Beaten Face

---

When the surrounding students saw Xie Chengye, leading several people, rushed towards Ye Feng, their eyes went wide open. They didn't want to even blink their eyes and miss this splendid scene.

These people, with the strong build and extraordinary temperament, were definitely not the ordinary street punks, they all looked practised men! Despite the fact Ye Feng had already knocked down a few small punks of Heavenly Serpent Gang before at the school gate, still, those trivial punks, were they truly capable enough to be compared with these practised men present at the moment?

The people with discerning eyes looked at Ye Feng, as they thought that this time he would be certainly violently thrashed by these people!

However, the thing which happened the next moment was far beyond their expectations.

On seeing those people advancing towards him, Ye Feng just lightly snorted and quickly pulled Su Menghan close to him. By still exhibiting a calm, relaxed and carefree look, he effortlessly threw several kicks towards them.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

Along with his seven subordinates, even Xie Chengye didn't have the ability to resist his kicks. In an instant, he was kicked and thrown by him directly to the end of the corridor, where covering his stomach, he became totally unable to crawl up again!

This was just the matter of split second, but had already turned Ou B all shocked, standing behind with his mouth open.

This was precisely that frightful state one achieved after practising the martial arts, wasn't it?

As for the crowd of other students, they entirely had no idea what martial arts was. Upon seeing this scene, all they could do was gawk, with their eyes wide-open, while being completely motionless. Simply, they couldn't believe their own eyes, was this guy Ye Feng so formidable all along?

However at this moment, Su Menghan was the only one person, who wasn't affected by this incident, she just stood next to him, gently smiling. Presently, she was the only one in the world who knew his identity as the Immortal Cultivator. If he couldn't resolve these ordinary people, then what was the meaning of being an Immortal Cultivator?

By totally ignoring the shocked expression of the crowd, Ye Feng strode towards Xie Chengye, who was still lying on the ground, then stamped his foot on his chest, and said: "Whom you have found as the powerful supporter, and also how could you dare seek me for trouble?"

Xie Chengye hadn't thought before that he would be crushed like this. At present, he was not only stepped on by him, but had also started suddenly spitting out a mouthful of blood, his face had already been coloured with a terrorised expression.

If he had known that earlier, this thought would have never crossed his mind to approach Ye Feng to trouble him!

But now it was too late.

He listened to Ye Feng's interrogation first, then by coughing a fresh blood off, said : "You have provoked Lin Clan .....you will have to pay for that surely."

Provoked Lin Clan?

Ye Feng heard that and immediately scowled, when did he annoy Lin Clan? If it came to Lin Clan, everyone knew that they didn't hold any favourable impression of him. However, when he gave a second thought, then he assumed that it might be Lin Rentian.

He was Lin Xiuwen's father and younger brother of Lin Detian.

Immediately this thought ran through his mind, then he turned around

towards Su Menghan and asked: “Menghan, who is the President of Yanjing’s first People’s Court, do you know that?”

Su Menghan immediately gave a ‘No’ by shaking her head, however, she immediately dug out her cell phone, her white, slim and tender finger rapidly hit on the screen, and soon with a delightful sweet smile, said : “Lin Rentian.”

Nowadays, the network had become so advanced, Lin Rentian was such a renowned public figure, obviously, he would be found easily on the internet if searched.

Indeed, it was him!

The name of Lin Rentian barely fell into Ye Feng’s ears and instantaneously his eyes flashed with coldness, a person, holding a high position like Lin Rentian, could really keep on causing trouble for him everywhere, couldn’t he? Lin Xiuwen became a retard, although Ye Feng had nothing to do with this matter, still, Lin Rentian actually aimed at him everywhere, simply like a crazy dog.

Undoubtedly, Xie Min, Xie Chengye and this group of people were stirred up by Lin Rentian to come and cause troubles, but unfortunately, they had underestimated Ye Feng. Because as per Ye Feng’s method, suppression needed direct violence!

After getting the reply, holding hands with Su Menghan, Ye Feng advanced towards the classroom’s door.

“Don’t come, don’t come over .....

A mere slap on the face had thrown Xie Min towards the classroom’s entrance. So, on seeing them approaching, she hurriedly got up. But then she thought something and felt that now they had gotten the support of Lin Rentian, therefore, she didn’t have to be afraid of these little brats. In return, she pointed at Su Menghan : “You slut, revoke the prosecution at once, otherwise not even Lin Clan could save you! As you know that Lin people stand by my side now..... ”

Ye Feng snorted coldly and completely ignored her words, instead, he

moved close to Su Menghan's ear and taught her some amazing uses of Zhenqi : "Just condense Zhenqi in your palm, this way you can enhance the power of the palm, this is the simplest and easiest use of it. "

Since Xie Min dared open her mouth to scold and humiliate Su Menghan, this truly made her firm to personally resolve this issue!

Su Menghan gritted her teeth and gradually started condensing Zhenqi in her palm, just like how Ye Feng taught her, simultaneously she raised her head and glared at Xie Min.

Although she had never been in favour of violence, but this woman Xie Min, the so-called her "stepmother" had not only trampled her for last so many years, but had also conspired a car accident and killed her grandmother. Even now, she was still insatiate and constantly calling her slut."

Even though such a good temperament and courteous girl Su Menghan was, but now she was also completely unable to stand her!

She stepped forward and arrived in front of Xie Min.

"What do you want to do? Slut. I tell you people, if you don't withdraw ....."

Xie Min's half face had already swollen up, besides this, although she was already extremely afraid of Ye Feng, still, she was boldly facing Su Menghan, just like a tigress, with a razor-sharp tongue. She must retrieve her influence in front of everyone now, or else, where could she show her Clan's face?

Moreover, she also firmly believed that in front of Lin Rentian's strength, Ye Feng didn't have any chance to be compared of. To put it like this, he was just a kid, although she could make a good show, but today she was actually beaten up by him. Therefore, certainly some another day, she would make him know that what would be the tragic consequences of hitting her.

"I won't revoke the prosecution."

Su Menghan stood before her holding an unwavering determination,



while constantly looking into her eyes, then she lifted her small hand.

Snapped!

A slap, again forcefully landed on another side of Xie Min's face, making her directly repel several steps, staggeringly she dashed against the wall and turned all dizzy!

Once again this scene turned the surrounding people totally stunned, except Ye Feng.

What just happened, clearly didn't this pure and innocent school beauty abruptly hit a person? And that Xie "aunt" was also too weak, she actually got slapped by a school girl, but still, why didn't she fight back?

How could anyone imagine that this young girl Su Menghan, standing before them, was now an Immortal Cultivator, and after absorbing a Lingshi, she had already promoted her Cultivation by three years. So her unmatched speed and power were entirely beyond Xie Min's imagination.

Furthermore, her Cultivation had barely hit three years, and the present situation was very crucial for her, otherwise Ye Feng would never have dared to make her beat someone. In case she had five years of Cultivation, and she hadn't known how to keep her strength under shackle, then most probably she would have killed an ordinary people just by a slap .....

"You also hit me! Smelly whore, you're screwed now!"

Xie Min touched her face and immediately an inconceivable expression crept over her face, as she looked at Su Menghan. She had never thought that this docile girl could become so decisive this fast.

Snapped!

Su Menghan didn't utter a word, just stepped forward, and engraved a slap directly on her face and threw her out of the way.

A radiant drop of tears rolled down from the corner of Su Menghan's eyes, as she thought how the opposite party had schemed against her

grandmother and ultimately killed her a few years back. This thought instantly transformed her into a merciless person. Even though she had ruthlessly slapped her, but still what was the use of it? Could slapping her bring her grandmother back to life?

Two palms, they had not only suddenly shattered Xie Min's prestige, but had also sent her to see stars in this daylight, also making her realise that if she would still continue saying bad words like this, then definitely she would be left with huge humiliation.

At this moment, she also didn't want to think much. Therefore, she just turned around and started running away.

For her, to escape was a lot better choice than being here and got beaten up over and over, therefore she ran to one side, while fishing her iphone out of her bag, as she intended to call someone for help.

But by this time, she had barely reached the stairway, and suddenly a figure appeared right before her out of the blue, readily raised his foot and kicked the phone she had in her hands. Then that figure turned and immediately stepped on it heavily.

Kacha!

Let alone her cell phone was iPhone, even if it had been Nokia, still would have been 100 % unable to withstand the pressure of being crushed under the foot, because that figure was –

“Grandpa?”

Originally Ye Feng was also looking towards the direction where she was advancing, however suddenly, that figure came in the line of his sight, making him totally unable to bear but gawk at once.

Ye Wentian, how did he appear here?

## Chapter 145 - Can You Take The Responsibility?

---

When a group of students noticed an old man suddenly appeared before them, aggressively kicked iPhone from Xie Min's hand and crushed it under his foot, at that time, each and everyone gawked on the spot, while letting their eyes and mouth wide open, who was this old man?

The grey sturdy attire, straight eyebrows slanting upwards like a sword, swift and fierce vision like an eagle, was almost similar to a fierce tiger choosing a human to devour!

“How did Grandpa arrive here?”

As soon as Su Menghan's eyes fell on him, she immediately took her hand back, panic-stricken, she ran to the side of Ye Feng and pulled his arm tightly, while quietly watching Ye Wentian in the front.

“I don't know either.”

Ye Feng was in a stunned state by his sudden appearance, therefore he scowled and shook his head. The whereabouts of Ye Wentian had always been very elusive and unpredictable. Although the last night, the thief had told him that the old man wasn't in Yanjing currently, but only God knew where was he the last night ?

“Humph.”

Ye Wentian removed his foot and lightly snorted, then after, without even pouring a glance at Xie Min, he crossed his hands behind his back, all calm and composed took a step and walked towards Ye Feng.

En route, he looked towards Xie Chengye and his several subordinates, then faintly said : “Being the soldier and show unity at all times is really a good thing, but like a promiscuous manner, helping a tyrant carrying out his evil deeds is actually not right, go back and reflect upon yourself.”

Ye Wentian had a rich experience of life, therefore, naturally he knew the way the thought process of those subordinates used to act. Helping Xie Chengye everywhere to “bully” people and being the part of showing off his influence, as for this matter, nobody knew who was wrong! Literally speaking, their eyes were truly smeared, therefore, they didn’t understand what they were doing was justifiable or not.

With that preaching, Ye Wentian arrived before Ye Feng and Su Menghan, and said something which was quite astonishing for them : “Brat, starting today, I, the old man will be personally guarding you .....

The moment Ye Feng and Su Menghan heard what was said, they remained stunned for a moment, a personal guard?

“Now that the Old man Lin doesn’t need me for his protection, naturally I have gotten my hands free now, so I’ll be by your side to prevent this little brat from running around.”

Afterwards, he looked at the gentle, smart and well-behaved Su Menghan, and nodded his head with satisfaction. The brat’s speed was not slow, he was away from Yanjing just for a night and this little girl’s body was already defiled by this brat.

Depending on her disposition, wouldn’t she surely become Ye Feng’s good wife from now on?

Currently, Ye Wentian’s mind was whirling around this thought, the more he imagined this, the more satisfied he felt.

As an old and genius martial artist, certainly, he could easily see the subtle changes Su Menghan’s body had.

“Protecting Old man Lin?”

Ye Feng asked one all of a sudden, Lin Hongchuan had been given protection all along by THIS mysterious dab hand, his Grandfather? No wonder their parents’ relationship was so good!

“Correct, he is now with your grandfather at the same place, in a good health, completely without any worry. Now, this old man just needs to keep a watch on you to ensure your safety and well-being.”

He went on, meanwhile slightly knitted his eyebrows, so many students were around surrounding them, naturally, it was something he really was not accustomed to.

Last night, he had a very long and detailed discussion with Lin Hongchuan and Tang Xuefeng, finally they arrived at a decision, making Lin Hongchuan stay in Quyang County, together with Tang Xuefeng in the same place, and letting Ye Wentian free to come and keep watch on Ye Feng.

Presently Lin Hongchuan, although had a very grand influence in this country China, but he didn't need to handle any matter. Therefore, he was free to enjoy his later years of life, carefreely, regardless of what place it was.

“Grandpa? Tang family?”

Ye Feng heard and instantly his expression changed: “That's where my mother belong to, right? Where is she now?”

On seeing him responding like this, Ye Wentian lightly said : “Your mother is suffering from amnesia, but she is living a very good life, you don't need to be concerned about her”

The word went out, and Ye Feng and Su Menghan glanced at each other.

Did Tang Qingling really lose her memory?

As if in order to comfort Ye Feng, Su Menghan made an effort and clasped his hand firmly, leaning against him more tightly.

“Well, you two go and attend your class now. And as for these people, this old man will solve this issue before leaving.”

After finished saying, he waved his hand and turned around, facing Xie Min and Xie Chengye!

“Let's go.”

Ye Feng repressed the palpitation of his heart, and by pulling Su Menghan, he advanced to enter the classroom. However, on seeing that

still a group of students were gathered around, he coughed and shouted loudly: “You guys haven’t gone back to study? What so interesting is going on here?”

A group of people saw him speaking, and all of a sudden they zipped their mouth and a pin drop silence spread in the classroom.

This guy Ye Feng could hit people and sent them flying so easily, now nobody could dare mess up with him!

Moreover, that old man probably was Ye Feng’s grandfather, and seemingly was more dominant and arrogant, with huge strength, couldn’t afford to stir him up as well! The little kids would study by themselves, the college entrance examination was already around the corner. In case they provoked this pair of grandfather and grandchild, they would also be thrashed by them and then they wouldn’t have any way to enrol the college entrance examination. This way, it would become a matter for a lifetime regrets .....

Soon, in the corridor outside the classroom, Ye Wentian arrived with his hands still crossed behind his back, and then stood firmly.

By this time, Xie Min also finally reacted and noticed that her iPhone was badly trampled by this old man! She was already in a foul mood, but the condition of her phone triggered her anger even more. However on seeing her brother Xie Chengye sprawled on the floor, constantly whining, her heart shivered with a little fear.

Also, it was really scary, how could a high school student beat so forcefully?

“You are completely useless, couldn’t even cope up with a mere high school student.”

Xie Min contemptuously looked at her brother, as she said that. However, right at this moment, her eyes got attracted towards the stairway and suddenly her face lit up with a delightful smile, the reinforcement had finally arrived!

“What’s the matter?”

She saw that wearing the uniform, several policemen came all the way running towards them, and surprisingly they were actually headed by Miao Zhenqiang! However, seeing the scene in the hallway, Miao Zhenqiang couldn't help but scowl, this Xie Clan, was it still suffering so badly?

Very obviously, these policemen were not those who were called by someone, but had already arrived all prepared to appear at the right moment. In short, they had joined hands with Xie Min for this time. Otherwise, it was impossible for the department to send Miao Zhenqiang personally on this mission.

“There is this high school student named Ye Feng, who had hit the people, in addition, this old man also stepped on my cell phone and trampled it. This kind of scum of society must be caught and given a severe punishment!”

Xie Min pointed her finger at Ye Wentian and ferociously, a bit arrogantly said.

Following her finger, Miao Zhenjiang also looked towards the classroom's door, although he had already planned to seize Ye Feng right on the spot, but when Ye Wentian fell in his line of sight, he was suddenly taken aback.

It was him, wasn't it?

His plan was completely doomed, this old guy couldn't be trifled with!

Suddenly the heavy presence of Ye Wentian sent a shiver down Miao Zhenqiang's spine.

Seeing him all stunned, standing completely motionless with his eyes wide open, naturally the policemen, who were tagged along with him, also didn't dare to act. In addition several school leaders, who had also arrived at the scene after getting informed of this whole incident, they also didn't dare to act rashly. Miao Zhenqiang, the provincial and ministerial level senior official, if such a great personality couldn't dare to move, then could the rest of the people even think of moving an inch?

“What are you looking at? My grandson and granddaughter-in-law are here to study, don’t come to disturb them.”

Ye Wentian continued saying faintly : “If because of you their college entrance examination is delayed, then can you take the responsibility?”

As soon as Miao Zhenqiang listened to his words, he burst into a cold sweat straight down.

He hadn’t thought that unexpectedly he would bump into this old man here. Wasn’t it a rumour that this old man had been continuously protecting Old man Lin, how did he get the free time to show up here?

“Officer Miao, he is just an old man, why are you still scared of him, just go and quickly seize this culprit!”

Xie Min didn’t understand the true situation, therefore she shouted from one side, her red swollen cheeks were looking very funny.

“You shut up.”

Miao Zhenjiang scolded her one and thought that this matter had already reached such a critical condition, did this young married woman want to add fuel to the fire, didn’t she have the brain?

“Officer Miao, this?”

The potbellied principal of the school also arrived at the scene and seeing an old man blocking the door of the classroom, he also started cold sweating. Even such a high ranking officer Miao didn’t dare to crash one’s way through? What was the identity of this old man? And how didn’t he ever notice that his school had such a great deity?

The present group of policemen was all embarrassed, they didn’t know whether to retreat or advance.

“All step aside.”

Right at this time, another very commanding voice passed on from the staircase. Soon, a group of ten fully-armed mysterious people, headed by a vigorous and resolute temperament man, around 35-36 years old, dashed in.



“Now the National Security Agency will handle this matter, the loitering persons, all leave this place rightaway.”

The man took out a credential, making the surrounding people glue to the spot.

NSA had arrived!

And the man was Thunder, evidently, he was also looking for the same target and that was undoubtedly Ye Feng as well as Ye Wentian.

Immediately the surrounding people turned their attention towards the old man, who was still standing and blocking the doorway, as they thought that this time how long could he continue blocking the door? The NSA had always refused to accept the tyranny!

## Chapter 146 - The Old Man's Aggression

---

Soon, along with the NSA's ten-man squad, Thunder arrived in front of Ye Wentian.

"Old man Ye, I'm sorry but Ye Feng is concerned with a murder case, so I have to bring him back."

As the Captain of the National Security Agency, naturally, he knew the identity of this old man as the highly respected person in the martial arts world! After all, every day, the NSA had to deal with the human arena. If he hadn't known who Ye Wentian was, then he should have died with embarrassment.

"Who died?"

Ye Wentian eyes stared as he asked.

"Cai Shahong, Yanjing University's first-year foreign student."

As for the truth, Thunder spoke out everything in front of Ye Wentian in a somewhat serious tone, while standing firmly, eyes all fixated at him, however still a bit caution at all times.

The human arena and the martial arts world, it could be said that they were the two polar opposite world. Although usually, they were on good terms, but every now and then, the conflict occurred between them usually always because of some martial artists, who couldn't control their anger and initiate a stormy situation.

However now, in the case of Ye Wentian's sudden appearance here, it had already piled up a lot of tension in Thunder's mind. Such a powerful old man was standing in front, of course, it wasn't at all easy to deal with him, even if he was there leading ten members, but probably they still had to plant there!

"It's him?"

Ye Wentian's eyebrows slightly wrinkled.

Regarding the identity of Cai Shahong, he had also heard before, but not because of his status, rather purely because of Lin Shiqing. Wasn't it a rumour that he was Lin Shiqing's beloved, who was actually now murdered. The old man was not in Yanjing just for a night, and so many things had already happened?

As for this student Cai Shahong, who had the United States origin, naturally, Ye Wentian didn't have a liking to, let alone the opposite party wanted to snatch away Lin Shiqing.

Dream on!

He was now in the heaven, indeed the old man loved to hear this news.

At present, Ye Wentian's heart was overwhelming with the feeling of self-satisfaction and proud. The story didn't end here, he was also feeling more and more satisfied with Ye Feng: This brat is really decisive enough, the first day he saw Lin Shiqing and decided at once to get rid of his love rival!

In his opinion, definitely, when Ye Feng would have met Lin Shiqing, would have fallen for her on the spot. However, when he would have heard that Cai Shaohong was her beloved, he would have taken a decision instantly to wipe him out of the scene! Enough ruthless! He truly deserved to be his grandson.

So many thoughts abruptly bubbled up and crossed his mind, but actually in a split second, he resumed his normal form like nothing affected him, and lightly said : "My grandson has entirely no connection with this case, Cai Shaohong died so what? What evidence you have to prove that my grandson is involved in this?"

By putting on a calm and composed expression, he said leisurely, while his footsteps were still motionless like a pine, still steadily standing outside the classroom's entrance, with unwavering determination!

"Old man Ye, don't embarrass us and make things difficult for us."

Thunder frowned.

“Ha ha ha, a joke.”

Ye Wentian laughed out loudly : “Currently, obviously you are embarrassing this old man. Want to grab my grandson? No way?!”

“Captain, this .....

A member of the National Security Agency could not stand to continue watching it, hence softly uttered a few words.

“Wait, let me ask for instructions from the Chief.”

Thunder didn’t dare to make a decision without authorization, therefore he hastily ran up to the side and pulled a communication device out to contact with Lin Detian.

Just in a short while, he returned and waved his hand : “Retreat team!”

Thunder had always been very vigorous and resolute, immediately after getting instructions from superiors, he no longer entangled there. He simply nodded his head to hint Ye Wentian and then led his team to leave the place.

Although the NSA people showed up there, but they left the place just within a period of five minutes.

This scene left everyone watching from a distance, like Miao Zhenqiang, Xie Min, school leaders and others, completely dumbstruck. This old man still had such a high pulse energy, that not even the NSA could dare to force a breakthrough and arrest the person? Moreover, Cai Shahong had actually died, this was a big news!

“You people haven’t gone yet?”

Revealing an absolute aggression and domineering, while standing in front of the classroom’s door, facing Miao Zhenqing, Xie Chengye and others, Ye Wentian roared in a high tone to scold them.

His words burst out and instantaneously shuddered the hearts of standing people. As a result, immediately, by clamping their tails between their legs, they vanished.

The school principal had been watching this all along, he wanted to

come up and pull a conversation with Ye Wentian, but then he noticed that he was also being actually glared by him to retreat, making his heart indescribably dubious, so all he could do now was similarly slipping away in disgrace.

One after another, everyone left the spot after getting yelled by Ye Wentian.

.....

On the other side, Ye Feng entered the classroom together with Su Menghan, then they divided and went towards their own seats, after all, their seats were not together.

Through Soul Search Technique's proliferation, he had been constantly paying attention to the situation outside the classroom, and noticed that Ye Wentian's aggression had already driven the NSA people away, which brought a delightful smile on his face, this old man had really an astonishing power.

Moreover, Ye Feng had already anticipated that Lin Detian would definitely send people to look for him, after all, the effect of Cai Shahong's death was too big. Even though he was not a murderer, still he would be grasped, so as to use him as the witness or so on.

Anyways, just now such a heart-chilling trouble had cropped up outside the classroom, but propitiously was instantly sorted out by a few words of Ye Wentian, and the reason was obvious enough, because of his grandfather's magical strength.

If Ye Feng also had that kind of strength, did he still need to hide his identity being a martial arts practitioner?

And the answer was certainly a big 'No'.

Hope this day wouldn't be too far, he thought in his heart, after all, nobody liked to wear a mask throughout one's life. Even the Skeleton masked man -Nanfang, reverted to his original form after solving Cai Shaohong's case.

This thing reminded him that also he didn't know who could be

Nanfang's next personal enemy?

Although currently, his body was in the classroom, but his train of thought had already fluttering around the East China Sea. Now that Ye Wentian would be guarding him round the clock, so going to the East China Sea wouldn't be so easy .....

But the interesting point was, today's incident didn't explode widely in the school like a bomb, because people soon had a more shocking news which had already turned into a breaking news.

Yanxi Villa District area was set on fire, an outstanding foreign student – Cai Shahong died, not even his skeleton could be saved!

Lin clan's Sanshao turned into a retard!

The suburban area of Yanjing city went through a severe explosion last night, which later on unexpectedly turned out to be a genetic experiment base!

Although these three things seemed totally unrelated, but no matter how, still were extremely shocking news, which soon caused mighty waves in the entire Yanjing.

Furthermore, what so strange was, Cai Shahong died, but neither the United States nor Pei Keang Group showed any reaction, as if they didn't know about it yet, entirely leaving this matter for people with high aspirations to take note of it.

Almost simultaneously, a lot of smart people tried to link this thing together with the suburban explosion. This could force such a strong organisation Pei Keang Group never dare to disclose this matter. Thereafter, only one possibility left, and that was, in this matter Cai Shahong's death couldn't wipe out the crimes.

Was that suburban area's gene experiment base somehow related with Cai Shaohong and Pei Keang Group?

But regardless of what the truth was, in the eyes of the outside world, it could only be considered as a guess, the real inside information must not be spilt out, not even a little bit. This was an extremely confidential

information which should be sealed off within the boundary of this country China, or else if leaked then it would certainly pave the way towards the international conflicts!

Henceforth, Yanjing University would be missing a bright and brilliant foreign student, making a lot of people sigh in regret. Besides, this incident turned countless young girls of the university feel all dispirited. But actually, no one knew what the true face of Cai Shaohong was and what he had tried to pull out secretly.

The time started to roll on.

Perhaps because of Ye Wentian, Lin Detian dropped the plan to pursue Ye Feng to trouble him, now Ye Feng's life had become very calm and smooth.

Under the strict supervision of his grandfather, he began to study round the clock. However, whether to talk about Ou B, other school student or the teachers, in the eyes of everyone, he didn't have any hope.

He had already scored the first rank from the bottom in his class, so now no matter how harder he try after buckling down, it was still impossible to make up the gap this time in the real entrance exam.

In addition, Su Menghan, who had also become an Immortal Cultivator, obviously felt a sudden memory enhancement, and for that, she thanked Ye Feng from the bottom of her heart. She was the only one person who had full confidence in Ye Feng and also believed that this time, he would certainly score well in this college entrance examination.

Therefore, she didn't give up the hope and started helping him every night in the room. She started tutoring him, although which somewhat baffled him in the beginning.

He also wanted to take her help in the study, but not for the schoolwork, but he loved to do that.....

Certainly, Su Menghan was firm determined to make him take her guidance, and he was also not good to shirk, he had to from her.

On the other side, in order to fix things up, Ye Wentian made these two

people live in two opposite rooms, and also strangled Ye Feng firmly so as to minimize the probability of his escape.

And for Ye Feng, ever since his rebirth in this modern city, this half month was going to be the most miserable two weeks for him!



## Chapter 147 - College Entrance Exam Ends

---

Half a month later, the date of college entrance examination approached on tiptoe.

Bubbling with full confidence, Ye Feng entered the examination room, completely disregarding the gazes of the surrounding students, which was infected with a feeling of despise.

Now, he could confidently go for the test and definitely hit the same high score as Su Menghan. Most importantly, Su Menghan had always been the first rank holder, not only just in her class, but also in the entire school. Now that she had turned into an Immortal Cultivator, which had already significantly enhanced her memory, so now it wouldn't be a huge problem for her to take the college entrance exam and score the highest numbers once again.

Moreover, now the gap between Ye Feng's and Su Menghan's level didn't remain that far!

However, merely relying on his memory was still not enough for him to achieve such an enormous progress in just half a month. The key was purely Su Menghan and her determination; she followed him all the time and spent a lot of time in home tutoring him. And if in return, he didn't show any good result, then he should better hurl in the river and kill himself.

The entrance exam was going to continue for the next two days. Ye Feng passed through the people holding a supercilious look, no one thought that he could ever get the good grades.

Everyone knew that Ye Feng had already gotten the first rank from the bottom in the class before, even in the entire school he was the last rank scorer! The whole school had the expectation that the last rank scorer would certainly give up the college entrance examination. But

surprisingly not only Ye Feng actually showed up there for the exam, but also made a group of people feel very surprised.

Certainly, whatever these people were thinking about Ye Feng's poor performance was one aspect, in addition, they were also very jealous of him, who had actually made him live together with Xiaohua, Su Menghan? Furthermore, his engagement was already set with Miss Lin, so for them, if he scored zero in the college entrance examination, then they would be delighted since this was what they all were wishing all along!

Obviously, Ye Feng ignored all these.

In the afternoon, after finishing the last exam, Ye Feng went out of the examination room and just ran into Su Menghan, who was also coming out from the next door's examination room, her pink one piece dress was embellishing her freshness and charm, making her a beautiful landscape in the campus.

"Ye Feng!"

Su Menghan waved and welcomed him with a sweet smile : "How was the test?"

"What do you think?"

Ye Feng smiled, as per his situation, certainly hadn't displayed the abnormal possibility.

On this day, almost all third-year senior high school students across the country had gotten out of the abyss of misery, the hellish sort of their painful life eventually ended today. However, those whose exam results didn't turn out good , they would certainly burst into tears, and those who would hit a good score, would be in a state of extreme merriment.

From a hell to another hell, or from now on they had finally entered the heaven? Everything was totally dependent on how the final outcome would be, they just needed to wait for the college entrance examination's result to be declared, to finally draw a conclusion.

"Come on, let's go home."

Ye Feng stepped forward and held her soft and small hand, then gave her a mischievous smile. Today, he was also equally in an extremely cheerful mood, because the pain of being under tutoring had finally ended now, he could finally be with her .....

On seeing his smiling face, harbouring a naughty intention behind that smile, regarding which she didn't have any clue what he was thinking, suddenly made her blush and her pure face turned red.

This scene suddenly attracted the eyes of other male students around, making each and everyone one of them secretly sigh, because, for them, it was just a total waste of such a nature's beautiful gift. Such a pretty and attractive pure beauty, had actually fallen in the hands of Ye Feng, this wasn't at all nature's justice.

However, naturally, Ye Feng didn't care about how other people thought about them. Ignoring everything, he just walked side by side with Su Menghan and left the examination place, all set to go back home and finally take a good rest.

He looked around, since he didn't know where his grandfather, Ye Wentian was. He just planned to wait until tomorrow morning, when Xie Min and Xie Chengye's trial would come to an end, then he would consider the way to get rid of the old man, so that he could go to the East China Sea.

In these last two weeks, Ye Feng noticed that Lin Rentian did everything to publicize Xie Min's case everywhere, not only he ignited this matter in the school, but had also spread this matter everywhere, making a lot of people in the society know about it. Now, many powerful public figures often used to discuss that with the backing of Lin Rentian, the person who sued Xie siblings, most probably wouldn't have the good end.

Naturally, Ye Feng had nothing to fear of.

Anyways they had Su Xinchang at their side to testify, who could play the effect of giving the final word. In worst case scenario, even if this man was bribed by the opposite party, still Ye Feng could rely on his

Hypnosis, making him reveal the truth, even could make Xie Min confess everything on her own!

Together with Su Menghan, he arrived at the school gate, where suddenly he noticed a familiar car, with a familiar figure actually waiting at the school gate. Surprisingly, it turned out to be Lin Shiqing, clad in a classy long-sleeved floral shirt, she was looking graceful.

However, just like the last time, again she became the centre of attraction. Seeing Ye Feng and Su Menghan walking together while holding hands with each other, she promptly moved ahead to meet up with them.

“How was the test, Little Ye?”

Lin Shiqing smiled, as if making the people bath in the spring wind.

“Pretty good.”

However, Ye Feng wasn't got affected a bit, in fact, in this last half a month, Lin Shiqing had been frequently approaching him and had been inviting him to dinner, but had always been turned down by him on the ground of his college entrance exam.

“Today you are free, right? The elder sister invites you to have a meal with her, what do you think?”

She really didn't want to give up, she looked at Su Menghan, then continued.

“Sorry, just finished the test, we are extremely tired rightnow, so we will directly go home.”

Ye Feng shook his head, pulled Su Menghan's hand, directly bypassed her, the first beauty of Yanjing, and then moved towards his silver BMW.

He didn't know the reason why Lin Shiqing had been chasing him for dinner, logically speaking, she didn't have to pester the opposite party, since the matter of Cai Shaohong had already been resolved. Then didn't this mean the first beauty of Yanjing still kept on thinking about him?

On the other hand, while looking at those two people leaving the place,

a trace of frustration immediately crawled over Lin Shiqing's face and she thought: This boy also has such kind of individuality, sorry Xiao Qi, I have no way to help you out by inviting him and making him totally drunk, so as to draw some information out about the whereabouts of Mo Jiuge .....

Then suddenly a thought crossed her mind and she couldn't help but slightly curled her corners of the mouth upwards, actually, she just had to wait for two months, then after Ye Feng would automatically arrive at Yanjing University, wouldn't it be certainly very interesting?

This kid, although superficially he looked so ordinary, but that wasn't the case.

.....

Next morning, Ye Feng woke up quite early and then advanced towards Yanjing first people's court along with Su Menghan. Last night they rolled all the time in the bedroom, still, both of them were remarkably lively and full of enthusiasm, looking all radiant, an Immortal Cultivation was really something very different.

Ye Feng opened the door of silver BMW and saw Su Xinchang was also led by Scar, who sat next to him in the passenger seat. Then he lightly asked: "You know what you have to say when the time comes, don't you?"

"I know."

Although Su Xinchang looked a bit disturbed, but still nodded his head. He looked at the bright and gorgeous Su Menghan and suddenly felt uneasiness in his heart. The condition of his daughter was entirely because of him, she had been infected by the drug addiction only because of his evil plans. Besides, he had also heard Scar speaking recently that it had been extremely painful for her, but also she couldn't quit.

However then, he remembered that recently Lin Clan had also put forward a condition before him. As long as he overruled this trial and proved that Su Menghan had falsely accused the opposite party, Lin Clan would return the shares of Su Sheng Group to him .....

Suddenly, Su Xinchang fell into the dilemma of choices.

Scar personally drove them to the court and soon they arrived there.

Along the way, Ye Feng constantly kept on scouting out, but didn't find Ye Wentian's figure anywhere. But when he got off at the entrance of the court, suddenly noticed him leisurely standing aside, as if he had been following him all along.

This left him with a bit of puzzled feeling, it seemed that escaping from the evil clutches of this old guy was too difficult.

Afterwards they moved ahead and walked towards the courtroom, naturally, Ye Wentian also followed them with his moderate pace, and as soon as they entered the courtroom, he quickly disappeared. Not even Ye Feng's Soul Search Technique could feel his presence, as if he was wrapped in a shroud of obscurity.

But Ye Feng knew that he would be certainly always staring at him, to prevent him from running around.

"Squeak" sound echoed.

Everyone arrived at the courtroom door, and the moment they pushed the door, the situation inside left them with a huge surprise.

Fuck, even the visitors' seats were fully taken!

Wasn't it just a murder case involved a hired person to kill someone, then why so many people were there?

Ye Feng arbitrarily swept around and sensed the presence of a lot of familiar figures there. Not only he noticed the presence of Su Menghan's uncle and aunt from Langfang, but also sensed a bunch of Xie people, several people of Lin Clan, as well as Xie Chengye's several military subordinates, were also there, presumably, they all were at Lin Rentian's side.

Almost everyone present at this moment turned around simultaneously and looked towards them.

Nobody believed that Su Menghan might win this case!

## Chapter 148 - Adverse Situation

---

Together with Scar and Su Xinchang, Ye Feng and Su Menghan slowly entered the courtroom.

Ye Feng raised his head and noticed that sitting on the presiding judge's position, was bespectacled Lin Rentian. Originally Lin Rentian's facial cast was exhibiting a very refined and cultured appearance, but the moment Ye Feng appeared over there, his expression suddenly changed and became somewhat gloomy.

His son had turned into a 2-year-old baby, obviously, it was very difficult for anyone to bear this blow. However for Lin Rentian, luckily he got the favourable opportunity to finally give vent to his anger on Ye Feng and Su Menghan together.

Whether it was the masked man Mo Jiuge or Cai Shaohong behind the miserable condition of his son Lin Xiuwen, Lin Rentian had no way to punish the culprit. All he could do was grab Ye Feng and Su Menghan intelligently rightnow to vent his anger, afterall who let Ye Feng have the friendly relationship with the masked man?

Originally, inside the courtroom everyone was talking in whispers, however as soon as they saw Ye Feng arrived there, along with the other three people, immediately they all zipped their mouths and a sudden silence spread everywhere, while their fingers raised one after another and pointed at them.

Moreover, several Lin Clan's people were also sitting together, obviously, they all were in favour of Lin Rentian. Besides them, some other people were also there, probably they were Lin Xiuwen's friends. On seeing Ye Feng arriving there, a malicious expression slowly crawled over their faces.

Actually, they had never thought after half a month of drumming up

support, Ye Feng and Su Menghan could actually really dare to show up in the court. However, they really did the right thing, in front of these many people, it would be good enough to make them completely lose their honour, even eventually, in return they would be sued for a false accusation!

On the other side, perhaps because of the support of Lin Rentian, Xie people including Xie Pinghui were already extremely elated with the feeling of success. Even though Xie Min and Xie Chengye were currently in the defendant's seat, but still there was not even a little sign of worry or nervousness on their faces. In fact holding an expression of ridiculing others, they were looking at the doorway from where Ye Feng along with his people was stepping in.

Did they really want to harm Xie people? Too tender point!

However, at this moment, Ye Feng's silhouette suddenly reminded Xie siblings of the incident when they were slapped twice by Ye Feng, and they couldn't help but suddenly feel the burning pain on their cheeks. At this gathering place, they would certainly make sure to pay him back for this!

Furthermore, several subordinates of Xie Chengye had also made their presence there, they were also sitting together in a group, their faces were clouded with righteous indignation, and were holding, even more, hatred and hostile feeling towards Ye Feng and Su Menghan now than before. Because in their eyes, Xie Chengye had always been a very good buddy, who was very loyal, how could he make an incitement to murder someone?

Not to mention hiring someone to kill an old lady, it was too absurd!

They could never believe this story, since they were absolutely sure that Ye Feng and Su Menghan must have falsely accused Xie siblings. Just because Ye Feng was on good terms with Old man Lin, this didn't give him the right to do whatever he wanted to. Fortunately, Lin Rentian, a perspicacious president, was still on the side of justice, and today was the presiding judge to carry on the trial of this case personally, so it was



expected that he would surely make the truth revealed.

As for the three maternal uncles of Su Menghan along with the married ladies of the family, altogether 10 people were also present there, sitting in a group. When their eyes also fell on Su Menghan, immediately the expression of hatred took over their faces. Most probably they would have thought that not only she had provoked Yanjing's Xie Clan as well as Lin Clan, but had also pulled them in, making them very unhappy with her this stupid action.

Especially, that Dai Gen's aunt from the last time, she was showing even more contemptuous look, accompanied by angrily gnashing her teeth with hatred.

Not long ago, because of the drug addiction, Dai Gen had been carried away by a mysterious organisation, and there was still no news of him so far, and how would he be, this also remained a mystery. So in the opinion of Su Menghan's Aunt, Ye Feng had a relationship with Heavenly Servant Gang, that gang which was the main culprit, who dragged Dai Gen into this world of drug addiction. She really had fairly enough right to hold a good reason to blame him.

Apart from them, there were also some public figures, as well as an official dispatched by the People's Procuratorate, since according to the stipulation, they were needed to participate in this kind of a trial. However similarly most of them were again not in the support of Su menghan in this lawsuit. A few days back President Lin Rentian had said that this prosecution was really trying to establish a false accusation, in that case, the final result was inevitable and this trial was nothing, merely a set of procedures.

Moreover, to Ye Feng's surprise, Lin Shiqing and Xiao Qi, both of these beautiful women were also actually present in the court. In this crowd, only these two beautiful women were the only one who didn't gloat over the disaster of others.

From a distance, Lin Shiqing smiled sweetly and greeted Ye Feng along with Su Menghan. However when she saw that one of the two men

following him was Su Xinchang, immediately a strange expression flashed in her beautiful eyes.

It seemed like today's key was Su Xinchang.

As for Xiao Qi, perhaps because of the masked man, she held a very favourable impression towards Ye Feng as well. She thought that Su Menghan, who was just a high school girl, how could she support this crime, so there was nothing wrong in suing the Xie people, right? This thing was most probably true!

Unfortunately, it seemed that Lin Rentian had already decided to make Su Menghan lose this lawsuit, so this matter didn't remain quite easy to handle .....

The cute and lovable face of Xiao Qi suddenly revealed a hint of little anxiousness.

Su Menghan had just finished her college entrance examination and in no time she would turn into a university student. In case she really lost this lawsuit now, and instead was charged with the false accusation to frame up the opposite party, that would be definitely become a major blow to her, even could ruin her whole life.

If the joint strength of Xie Clan and Lin Rentian was really exerted, and they really took this case seriously, in that case, it was quite possible that they could make Su Menghan receive several years of set term imprisonment!

Xiao Qi looked towards the collegiate bench of members headed by Lin Rentian, and thought that these might be from Lin Rentian's department, so whatever Lin Rentian would say, they would definitely go along with him.

*(Lastvoice – collegiate bench of members can also be called as panel of judges.)*

Then she shifted her vision towards the defendant lawyer, not only he was a veteran lawyer but was directly under Miao Clan's influence. It was said that his defence capability was unbeatable and was one of the best

in the whole Yanjing. Asking him to appear in the court would have been really very expensive for Xie Clan.

Therefore, at present, the situation was very disadvantageous for Ye Feng and Su Menghan!

“Come on, we will surely succeed.”

Ye Feng was not even the least bit concerned about the other people’s gazes and thoughts, he just smiled and tried to cheer Su Menghan up. Then, along with Scar and Su Xinchang, he finally found the last few vacant seats, where he sat down with them.

Su Menghan, as a private prosecutor, needed to sit on the front seat of the private prosecutor.

When she took her seat, immediately her eyes drew towards those Xie siblings, she noticed the feeling of disdain and banter in their eyes, which in return turned her a bit anxious. Although she had always received good grades in the school, but this was her first time sitting in this situation, as the private prosecutor.

The entire court was solemn and respectful, but there was no one on her side, making her have a feeling of being at a loss. Consequently, she couldn’t bear but tilt her head to look at the side of Ye Feng.

Seeing Ye Feng constantly smiling to encourage her, Su Menghan’s mind finally settled down and she became calm.

Then after, she raised her head and soon noticed various kinds of sneerings, Xie siblings’ sneering, the sneering of defendant lawyer, presiding judge Lin Rentian’s sneer, as well as sneering of numerous collegiate bench member, as if they were piled up with infinite confidence that they were going to hit the victory today.

Having Ye Feng at one side was certainly a good support for her!

Since all people had finally arrived, Lin Rentian at once announced to begin the court session.

According to the convention, naturally he read out loud the Rules of the

court first, then after announced the case origin, the prosecution cause of action, as well as the list of collegiate bench member hearing the trial, such as secretary, private prosecutor, defence lawyer and a series of personnel. Afterwards, he immediately informed the litigants in the lawsuit process that they had some rights in accordance with the law, such as they could apply for other people to avoid applying for the witness to show up on the scene, and so on.

After finished reading the whole process, the image of Lin Rentian wearing eyeglasses actually appeared extremely solemn and respectful, but his cloudy eyes and cold smiling face actually couldn't escape from Ye Feng's keen eyes.

"Be well prepared, you are the most crucial witness here."

Ye Feng sitting on the seat, said lightly to nearby sitting Su Xinchang.

"Hmm."

Still holding a complicated expression Su Xinchang simply nodded his head.

He threw a quick glance at his daughter and then embarked on a private prosecutor's seat, such a beautiful but again her somewhat helpless silhouette, made him unable to bear and he again started struggling up in his heart.

## Chapter 149 - An Assured Victory

---

After holding the court session, Lin Rentian schematically read out the indictment loudly, afterwards signalled the accused persons to state their points.

Firstly, Xie Min relaxedly said: “She sued me on this ground that a few years ago I hired someone to drive and hit a person, it is purely fictitious! I had completely nothing to do with her grandmother, then why would I hire someone to hit and kill her!?”

Right after that Xie Chengye also added : “Even I have been also unjustly accused, one must know I’m a soldier, totally dedicated to our country, can a soldier ever do such a thing to do harm to the society?”

His words barely fell, and immediately turned his several subordinates excited, as if they almost wanted to shout out loud to applaud him, because for them whatever he said was right!

In the indictment, Scar had written everything clearly that six years ago, Xie Min conspired with Xie Chengye to hire an outside man to deliberately cause a car accident. Moreover, because of Su Xinchang’s proper explanation, plenty of details were there in the indictment, which were very clear.

However, when Lin Rentian interrogated the facts of the crime mentioned in the indictment, not only Xie Min and Xie Chengye completely denied the contents, but also blamed that Su Menghan was trying to establish a false accusation on them.

“She is clearly talking nonsense, how could it be possible that she didn’t know my grandmother!”

On seeing Xie Min’s flat denial, Su Menghan immediately raised an objection : “Once at the entrance of Qingfeng Park, she had stated everything clearly with her own mouth, I still have that cell phone

recording!”

Ye Feng used to often lose his cell phone, but Su Menghan’s conservancy was quite good.

She dug out her cell phone directly and played the voice recording, soon the phone resounded an acrid female voice, it was really Xie Min : “..... What did you say, saw your grandmother? In those days, she had really greatly opposed your dad’s marriage with me, I have a vivid memory. What a pity, you went there only to see her grave .....”

A few words of voice recording was broadcasted, which was sufficient enough to reveal Xie Min’s rampancy and overbearing personality!

Xie Min had never thought that Su Menghan would actually save this kind of recording, her complexion suddenly darkened. But then she looked around and felt surprised to find that including Lin Rentian, almost everyone was still self-poised, which made her mind feel relieved.

“What is this? This is what I found in my subsequent investigation that the old woman died many years back, who still remembers her?”

However, Xie Min still continued to deny the fact and kept on sarcastically replying.

“I have other recordings as well.”

Su Menghan gazed at Xie Min and thought that as expected this woman was indeed too shameless. However, fortunately, Su Menghan had already done her preparation beforehand, at that time when Su Xinchang had spoken out everything about the fact that happened six years ago, she had recorded down everything quite intelligently only for this day.

She had waited quite a long time for this day!

This time, the recording was a little long, although it was played for more than five minutes, but was still enough to bring into the light the clear details of the fact which Su Xinchang had confessed in front of Ye Feng and Su Menghan that evening.

Once the recording was aired, the audience turned completely silent.

Most of the people simultaneously threw their glances towards Ye Feng and Su Xinchang, but as for Su Xinchang, he hadn't expected this, so he was in a daze all of a sudden.

This girl really used to handle things so carefully, she even recorded his statement as well, didn't she?

The impact of this was, Lin Shiqing and Xiao Qi, these two beautiful women suddenly remained astonished, seeing this recording. For them, Su Menghan, who looked like a gentle high school girl, actually had such an exquisite mind! Unfortunately, having this voice recording didn't represent anything. The distance to be covered to win this lawsuit was still quite far!

Still holding a self-composed stature, Lin Rentian pushed his eyeglasses on the bridge of his nose : "The authenticity of this recording is waiting for evaluation, please hand over the recording to the experts, later they will draw the conclusion."

Lin Rentian, an old and crafty fox, had already expected the emergence of this situation, therefore had hired the specialised expert in advance, and had also made sure the opposite party must stand on his side! As long as the sound recording was in the clutch of the experts, he would regain his control on everything soon.

On the other side, it didn't take long for Su Menghan to understand this situation, but the situation she was in rightnow, could she have the right to refuse? Soon, her cell phone was handed over to the experts with specialized skills, and the process immediately began to establish the authenticity of the recording.

Although Su Menghan was not convinced, but when she looked at Ye Feng smiling and boosting her up, again resumed her calm stature.

Soon the courtroom started buzzing with the whispering sound of the people, making Lin Rentian knock the gavel : "Silence. Now, first call the litigant to appear in the court, the main person involved in this accident case back then, Li Dagou."

Immediately, a dark skinned, but also a good middle-aged man was brought to the court.

It was clearly mentioned in the indictment that in those days, the man who drove to kill Su Menghan's grandmother was this man Li Dagou. It was said that during that period, he was just a temporary worker, however now, apparently he had already become chief labour contractor, and that also in Su Sheng Group.

Even if his status had changed, but his appearance and temperament couldn't change, even if he was dressed in a western-styled suit, but still looked like a nouveau riche.

Su Menghan looked at Li Dagou who was taken along to the court, soon a trace of hatred gradually appeared in her beautiful eyes. This was the man who drove the vehicle back then to deliberately kill her grandmother!

Right after arriving there, Li Dagou took a quick glance of Su Menghan first, it seemed like his eyes were overflowing with incomparable disgust for her.

Li Dagou, do you admit that in the past, you were hired by Xie Min and Xie Chengye to deliberately create a car accident, causing the death of the victim?"

One individual from the collegiate bench of judges asked.

"I don't admit it, by the way, this case had already been resolved earlier, hadn't it?"

Li Dagou said that in a strong voice, afterwards shifted his vision and stared at Su Menghan : "I wasn't careful back then and suffered an accident. Young girl, you shouldn't wrongly accuse innocent people like this."

"Nonsense!"

Su Menghan immediately refuted.

"Silence."



Lin Rentian secretly sneered, but still maintaining an extremely solemn face, he continued asking questions one after another from Li Dagou. And every time he fired a question, Li Dagou replied in such a way, as if he was completely fixated to the point all along that Xie Min and Xie Chengye had nothing to do with this, it was just an accident.

“Now, invite the victim’s son, Huang Ande as the witness to appear in the court.”

Lin Rentian continued.

Immediately after that announcement, one of the three uncles of Su Menghan got up from his seat and was brought in front. Huang Ande was Dai Gen’s father, he looked a little vicissitude, his eyes were also flickering, apparently he wasn’t resolute at this moment.

En route, without even looking at Su Menghan, Huang Ande directly went straight and confronted the collegiate bench of judges.

After taking the oath that the witness wouldn’t perjure, finally, a bit slowly he said : “Six years ago, my mother was already a little mentally disturbed. Whatever was mentioned in the indictment of that accident was absolutely true, she wasn’t careful, rushed the red light and was hit .....

“Uncle, you!”

This was really something beyond Su Menghan’s understanding, including her family members, even the son of her grandmother could dare stand on the side of the outsiders!

“Whatever I said are the facts, although the victim was my mother, but the facts are the facts, and I .....

As Huang Ande said that, his eyes flashed with a hint of anxiety, actually all along he couldn’t dare to confront Su Menghan’s pitiful eyes. Confronting the collaborated strength of Xie Clan and Lin Rentian was something which nobody could handle easily, that was totally out of the question! Besides, prior to the hearing, Lin Rentian and Xie people had already grabbed him and had carried on combining threats with

inducements.

Quickly, the interrogation of the two witnesses was completed, and so far the balance of victory had already tilted towards Lin Rentian side!

“Presiding judge, after a thorough evaluation, this recording has been identified as a counterfeit recording, which can’t be used as an evidence.”

Soon the evaluation report of specialised experts came out, apparently, it insisted on the fact that Su Menghan had used a forged evidence. A false accusation and now the false evidence, if these two big charges were together charged on her, it was sufficient enough to force her behind the bar for several years!

“Hmm, please ask the father of the private prosecutor, Su Xinchang to appear in the court as the next witness.”

Lin Rentian’s eyes revealed a complacent look.

A little girl wanted to fight with him, no way!

When Su Xinchang stood up, Lin Rentian felt that it was now certain that he was going to grab the victory any moment now, because he hadn’t even left Su Xinchang alone, they threatened him as well, therefore, he had a feeling that Su Xinchang would never dare to reveal the truth!

“You will help your daughter or your personal enemy? I hope that you would have already considered about it clearly.”

When Su Xinchang got up, Ye Feng reminded him this sentence, then raised his head and looked towards the dock where Xie Min and Xie Chengye were.

If it really didn’t go well, then hypnosis should be done rightaway.

Nobody knew that Ye Feng was already sure of his success, from the beginning to the end!

## Chapter 150 - Astonishing Reversal!

---

Su Xinchang gradually stepped onto the witness seat.

On one side there was his daughter Su Menghan, when he looked at her, then he noticed her beautiful eyes had a touch of little expectation as well as fear. Her expectation was that certainly, Su Xinchang would speak out everything truthfully, making Xie Min and Xie Chengye convicted of this accident; and her fear was, most probably Su Xinchang could let her down again.

Su Xinchang's heart was really in a state of entanglement and he was constantly struggling hard with his own thoughts, all puzzled he finally took the witness seat.

On the other side, his wife Xie Min was there whom he had married ten years ago and who was the key person who had helped him a lot in obtaining various achievements all along.

Moreover, in front of him, Lin Rentian was also there who could make his second half of life remarkably splendid.

While behind him, in the visitors' seats, there were numerous people just enjoying watching this bustling scene and wondering how Su Xinchang would present everything into light.

And there was also Li Dagou, who was sitting aside and showing a satisfied smile, it was simply impossible for him to admit this thing, otherwise wouldn't he be sent to the prison? However, he collaborated with President Lin on this agreement that he would receive one lack money once this case would come to an end, how cheap this matter was!

By now Huang Ande had also occupied his seat and sat together with the ten other relatives of Su Menghan's maternal Clan, just a moment ago he made his testimony, which could get him two hundred thousand money to improve his present life, as well as if Dai Gen could swear off

the drug addiction and come back, then this money could also be used in getting him married and settle down.....

Lin Shiqing and Xiao Qi were somewhat anxiously looking at Su Xinchang standing in front.

This man, afterall how would he make a choice?

“I take an oath in the court: I will faithfully fulfil the obligations prescribed by the law for testimony, will only speak the truth that I know. If I disobey the oath, I would like to undertake the corresponding legal liability and moral condemnation .....

Su Xinchang, according to the firm voice of justice, began to take an oath.

Meanwhile, from one side, Xie Min signalled him with her eyes, the meaning of which was quite obvious.

Su Xinchang looked into her eyes, also glanced at the solemn and respectful appearance of Lin Rentian who was in the front and ultimately his heart set a firm resolve.

“I can prove that the matter which had taken place six years ago, Xie Min and Xie Chengye has nothing to do with it! Although one side is my former wife, while the other side is my daughter, but .....

Holding a very resolute facial expression, Su Xinchang finally said aloud.

The words went out and stole away the complexion of Su Menghan rightaway, her face turned white as she thought that really, in the end, this person Su Xinchang showed his true colours, he had always been such a disloyal person all along, how did she anticipate that he might change?

However, Su Menghan's suddenly changed complexion couldn't escape Su Xinchang's eyes, he noticed that she had immediately turned deathly white, although he was feeling restless in his heart, but was still very resolute. What drove him to make this choice was very clear in his mind, now that Su Menghan had fallen in the clutch of this new type of drug

addiction, her lifespan had already reduced, she couldn't live more than a year, since this being the case, better he should discard considering him as finished.

If he succeeded in defending Xie Min and Xie Chengye, then from now on they could also help him a little in the future, and as for Lin Rentian, like what he said, he would return Su Sheng Group's shares to him positively.....

Finally, Xie siblings heaved a sign of relief; Lin Rentian naturally brightened up; almost everyone present on the scene was all relieved, really the final result was similar to their speculation.

“Su Xinchang!”

Right at this moment, a resonate voice from the visitor's seat suddenly rang up, which shivered the heart of everyone present rightnow in the courtroom for hearing this trial!

Everyone spontaneously turned one's attention towards Ye Feng who was currently standing.

“Immortal Technique, Hypnosis!”

Ye Feng saw that Su Xinchang, Xie Min and Xie Chengye simultaneously turning around towards him, and in a split second he looked into the eyes of those three people, one after another, super fast, simultaneously cast hypnosis on them and implanted a thought in their minds at once!

Such hypnosis usually caused a substantial injury to the human, since Su Xinchang didn't know anything about repentance, hence all trapped Ye Feng had to take this step.

Invisible and several wisps of Zhenqi, directly sneaked into Su Xinchang's brain. And the next moment, the man directly knelt down on his knees.

“Menghan, I made a mistake!”

His tearful voice suddenly reverberated!

This astonishing scene, made everyone present on the scene gawk, they thought that this man, in general situation, decided to remain dumbfounded, then what happened to him now that he knelt down towards his daughter suddenly?

“Your grandmother was really murdered by the person hired by Xie Min and Xie Chengye, I have a lot of evidence, including the proof of transaction which had happened with Li Dagou. Later, it was me who went out with money to compensate Li Dagou .....

“I have been always unfair to you my daughter, Menghan forgive me! Whatever I said just now is 100 % true!”

Under the influence of hypnosis, all of a sudden Su Xinchang forgot everything and knelt down towards Su Menghan, confessed everything!

This scene suddenly blew away Lin Rentian’s mind, as if he was hit by a huge shock!

He couldn’t properly think through this sudden occurring of Su Xinchang’s action. Fortunately just a moment ago, he had really done a good job and spoke everything just like the plan, so now suddenly what happened to him which made him break out in this kind of bewildering action?

On the other side, on hearing this baffling statement, panic-stricken, Li Dagou stood up at once. And he had to be anxious, in case this matter was brought to the light like this, obviously, he would be charged with the murder case and would be forced to spend his entire life in the prison!

“Awesome!”

Xiao Qi’s face lit up with the joyous expression, she hadn’t expected at all that at a critical moment such a startling reversal could take place. It seemed that this man Su Xinchang still had a bit of conscience thing left, right?

Somewhat puzzled, Lin Shiqing gazed at Ye Feng who had occupied his seat by now, and thought that this boy shouted loudly, which really had

such an enormous power, that it even forced Su Xinchang to suddenly thoroughly rectify his old misdeeds and turn into a reformed man?

Ye Feng felt her vision and understood that he was being observed.

Besides, what Ye Feng noticed was a trace of curiosity and suspicion Lin Shiqing's eyes were revealing, which left his heart a bit puzzled, this girl Miss Lin, why did she come here? He couldn't guess properly.

At this moment, Su Menghan also turned her head and looked towards her maternal relatives, gradually she felt tightness in her heart, Su Xinchang was indeed neither honest nor kind, how did he strike back at such a crucial moment?

“Silence Silence!”

Lin Rentian's bespectacled face suddenly darkened a bit as he knocked the gravel.

He was indeed a crafty old fox!

Then he gloomily glanced towards visitor's side where Ye Feng was and said : “This student, the court is such a serious place, it doesn't allow you to threaten the witness, I think that you should leave this place first. Security!”

“All right, I walk by myself, no problem.”

Ye Feng got up and smiled, anyway, he had already implanted a thought in the minds of those three people, Su Xinchang, Xie Min and Xie Chengye. Even if he wasn't there, these three people would still acknowledge their guilt one after another!

“Come on.”

Ye Feng stood up and waved his hand to Su Menghan by piling up an encouraging smile, then he turned around and left the courtroom.

Upon seeing him so calm and relaxed, Lin Rentian felt a little strange, he thought that this boy, how oddly he always turned out to be everywhere, it was indeed a little unusual.

However, when Su Menghan saw Ye Feng leaving the scene, her heart

felt a little lonely. Fortunately, Su Xinchang had admitted the facts truthfully now, making her heart feel a stream of warmth. Now that Su Xinchang had testified everything, so it should be enough, right?

“Witness Su Xinchang, since he was threatened in the court, therefore his current testimony becomes invalid. Now please re-testify and say the truth you know.”

Wrapping himself with a calm and composed expression, Lin Rentian said that, his bespectacled face revealed a trace of the threat as he looked at Su Xinchang and said : “Committing perjury in the middle of the trial in this serious court, the consequences of which would be equally serious.”

“Moreover, if for a moment let’s consider whatever you just said thoughtfully is the truth, then not only you have constituted the perjury charge, but also it is proved that you have also committed the crime of harbouring culprits!”

Meanwhile, the defence lawyer of Miao Clan finally found the opportunity to display his performance, he stood up and said : “If this case of hiring a person to murder turns out to be true, then it’s clear you have withheld this information so long, harboring criminals for six years, the situation is very serious .....

Obviously, this was an open threat to Su Xinchang!

In the general course of the trial, such threats were not at all permitted. But in this game, since Lin Rentian was leading, therefore Miao Clan’s lawyer didn’t consider this thing.

Su Menghan heard that and immediately her face turned white again, how could this lawyer be so shameless?

While everybody thought that the situation would go to the right path, in the process of the development of the situation, something unexpected happened and completely turned the table instantly, making the whole situation beyond everyone’s expectations.

“No, I have to stick to the facts, not only Xie Min and Xie Chengye are



guilty but Li Dagou is also one of them!”

Su Xinchang determinedly said that.

His statement fell and really surprised the present people for a moment, while their eyes got fixated at Xie siblings. When everyone thought that this sibling would soon go all out to refute this completely, exactly then an astonishing thing happened again.

“I made a mistake! I am guilty!”

Xie Min and Xie Chengye, both simultaneously knelt down in front of Su Menghan!

Thunderstruck, Lin Rentian suddenly stood up, his face was revealing an extremely annoyed expression at this moment, these three people, what the hell had gotten into them!